







Gc
929.2
D360E

ALLEN COUNTY HISTORICAL
COLLECTION

5010302

THE DE FORESTS OF AVESNES^C

(AND OF NEW NETHERLAND)

A HUGUENOT THREAD IN AMERICAN COLONIAL HISTORY

1494 to the Present Time

WITH THREE HERALDIC ILLUSTRATIONS

BY

J. W. DE FOREST

EX. CAPT. AND B'VT MAJ. U. S. VOLS.

AUTHOR OF A LOVER'S REVOLT, THE ODDEST OF COURTSIPS, IRENE THE
MISSIONARY, PLAYING THE MISCHIEF, JUSTINE'S LOVERS, HONEST
JOHN VANE, THE WETHERELL AFFAIR, OVERLAND, MISS
RAVENEL'S CONVERSION, SEACLIFF, EUROPEAN
ACQUAINTANCE, ORIENTAL ACQUAINTANCE,
THE HISTORY OF THE INDIANS OF
CONNECTICUT, ETC., ETC.



NEW HAVEN, CONNECTICUT
THE TUTTLE, MOREHOUSE & TAYLOR CO.
PRINTERS AND PUBLISHERS

1900

Allen County Public Library
Ft. Wayne, Indiana

COPYRIGHT, 1900
BY
J. W. DE FOREST

5018392



THE OLD CHURCH OF AVESNES.

Handwritten 8111 2-26-68 41019



PREFACE.

It has not been my intention to produce a complete "family history" of the Avenese de Forests in Europe and in America. That would be a more serious labor than I care to confront.

I have merely purposed to discover the origin of the family; to trace it from that origin down to its establishment in the New World; to indicate the lineages which sprang from the ancestral emigrant; and to push one lineage down to the middle of the nineteenth century. Obviously, whatever de Forest can prove his relationship to that lineage will thereby ally himself to the founders of the house of Avesnes,* or wherever future research may establish the ultimate birthplace of our stock and name.

The following is an incomplete statement of the sources of information which I have made use of:

The library of the British Museum, both for manuscripts and printed works.

The principal libraries at Paris, including the National and Mazarin, containing thousands of volumes of manuscripts bearing on family history.

The Royal and Burgundian library at Brussels; 22,000 mss.

The libraries of Leyden, Cambay, Valenciennes, Douai and Louvain; many mss.

*In France, department du Nord. Pronounce, "Ah-vayn."

The "Archives of the Realm" at Brussels, and the "State Archives" at Mons, in Belgium.

The National Archives, and the bureau of the "Hooge Raad Van Adel," at the Hague, Holland.

The civic records at the Hague, Leyden, Harlem, Lille, St. Quentin and Cambrai.

The Walloon church-registers, preserved in the library of the university of Leyden.

The registers of the ancient Huguenot church of Sedan.

The ecclesiastical and civic records of Avesnes, including those at Avesnes, in the department-archives at Lille, and in the Documents Concerning Flanders at the National Library, Paris.

Add to the above list scores of printed works, such as collections of provincial documents, cartularies of monasteries and bishoprics, local encyclopedias and historical dictionaries, magazines of history and geography, proceedings of historical societies, collections of genealogy, chronicles and memoirs, nobiliaires and armories, so many in number and so lengthy in title that I shrink from cataloguing them. It hardly need be explained that a very large proportion of them contained nothing related to my subject, or possibly some mere scrap of information.

With regard to the colonizing and the cis-Atlantic periods my authorities will be mentioned in the narrative, or cited in foot-notes, or quoted in the Appendix. It has been my object, by the way, to furnish proof for every statement of importance, and to assume nothing.

I have had important assistance in the production of this volume. My acknowledgments are specially

due to Mr. Charles M. Dozy, archivist of Leyden, who found for me and deciphered the nearly illegible and very important records of Avesnes, besides sending me briefs of the church-registers at Sedan and much information from Holland.

I am also indebted for documents to the American Legation at the Hague, to Mr. du Rieu chief of the University library at Leyden, to M. Leopold Devillers of the State Archives of Mons, to M. Albert Gravet of Avesnes, to M. J. Lecat librarian of Valenciennes, and M. Leon Pajot professional archivist at Paris, not to mention others who have forwarded results, perhaps negative, but still useful.

NEW YORK BAY IN MAY 1624.

Skipper Cornelis Mey, hardy sea-rover of Holland,
 Clutches with horny hand the galliot's squeaking tiller,
 Whistling a viking's prayer to indolent elves of breezes,
 Watching the shaking sails and the streaky foam of the currents;
 Whiles, in the hollowing waist, sombre of visage and vesture,
 Marvelling, stand the Walloons, dumb as if carven in marble,
 Watching the oncoming point of a hazy, forested island,
 Dotted with cabins of bark, where savages scream and signal
 Wild invitation—to what? barter? or cannibal battle?

Wandering, swarthy Walloons, born of pre-Aryan races,
 Chased from Numidian* plains to Europe in mythical æons;
 Hunters primeval beside the Tagus and Guadalquiver,
 Treading the bald Pyrenees, the forests of Gaul and Arden;
 Shattering Teuton and Kimber, yielding to Cæsar and Clovis,
 Torn by unwearying war, shared among chaffering princes;
 Yet still existent, nor quite forgetful of name and glory;
 Whither betide you at last? sons of the Belgæ—my fathers—
 Tracking the occident wave under the lion of Holland.

"Tumults and terrors we leave, flying from Spain the destroyer
 Drunken with blood of the saints, thirsting for blood forever;
 Battle-trod Europe we leave, seeking the shores of Atlantis,
 Daring the grave-digging sea, the deadly breath of morasses,
 Daring the puma and bear, the wolf and furtive Mohican;
 Hoping, at least, to obtain peace from the warrings of nations,
 Peace from the scaffold and stake; yea, freedom of word and
 worship."

So answer the dark Walloons, pilgrims of numerous ages,
 Hunted from land unto land by stress of following peoples.

* So say Collignon and others, while Ripley and others say
 Armenoid.

GENERAL CONTENTS.

	PAGE.
PREFACE,	iii
INTRODUCTION,	I

Origin of the name de Forest.
The *de* not necessarily a proof of nobility.
Antiquity of the name.
Briefs of records in proof thereof.
Patronymic, or estate-name?
Not the same with de la Forest or du Forest.
Numerous families called de Forest and du Forest.
Sham coats of arms attributed to the American de Forests.
No relationship with the "de Forests in Cambresis."
The "de Forests of Quartdeville" probably our relatives.
History of the "de Forests of Quartdeville."
Their coat of arms.
Their marriages and relationships.
Descendants of Marguerite (de Forest) Ofarel (note).

CHAPTER I.

16

Avesnes and Its Early de Forests.

The Walloons and their history.
Protestantism among them.
Their country not militarily defensible.
Hainaut, province of.
Avesnes and its lords.
Its destruction in 1477; loss of records.
Subsequent history and misfortunes.

Surviving archives of Avesnes.
 Some of its mortuary inscriptions.
 Gilles de Forest, 1494 to 1509.
 Did he belong to the landed gentry?
 The burghers then an honorable class.
 The "bourgeois-gentilhomme."
 Melchioris de Forest and Marguerite de Forest, of 1530.

 CHAPTER II.

26

Melchior de Forest 2nd.

Melchior de Forest 2nd ; his marriage in 1533.
 Descent of his wife ; arms of her ancestors.
 The Protestant movement near Melchior de Forest.
 Risings of Valenciennes and Le Cateau, 1566.
 Cruelties of Mansfield and Noircarmes.
 Religious war in and around Hainaut ; 1568 and 1570.
 Melchior de Forest down to 1571-72 ; his death.
 His wife's history to 1579 ; her death.
 Children of the above ; canons Jaspard and Gilles.
 The chapter of St. Nicolas.
 Digression concerning canonries.
 Gilles becomes provost ; masses for Jaspard.
 Antoine de Forest, fiefholder and alderman.
 Baltazar de Forest, alderman ; his marriage.
 His property affairs ; a wool merchant.
 Honorable nature of the woolen trade.
 History of the title *demoiselle*.
 Descendants of Baltazar down to 1685.
 Melchior de Forest 3d ; deceased 1582.
 Ancestors of the Quartdeville de Forests ?
 Simon, deceased 1598.
 Philippe and Giles ; their wives *demoiselles*.
 Query as to the du Trieu family.
 Nicolas, deceased 1625.

GENERAL CONTENTS.

ix

CHAPTER III.

42

Jean de Forest.

- Jean de Forest, first Protestant of the family.
 Probably youngest son of Melchior 2nd.
 Marries Anne Maillard ; her family.
 Not the same with Jean de Forest of Le Cateau, 1566.
 Queries concerning his early life.
 The religious war during his period.
 Devastation of the Walloon provinces.
 Emigration of Jean de Forest to Sedan, about 1598.
 Dispersion of his family.
 Residence in Sedan ; marriage of Jesse de Forest.
 Jean's departure for Holland ; prosperity of that country.
 He visits Bergen op Zoom, Leyden, and Amsterdam.
 Betrothal of his daughter Anne, 1606.
 Query as to the word *caffatier*.
 Marriage of Anne de Forest, 1607.
 Query as to the death of Jean de Forest.
 Burial of his widow.

CHAPTER IV.

51

Jesse de Forest.

- Jesse de Forest ; when born ?
 His marriage at Sedan, 1601.
 Baptismal records of six children at Sedan.
 Several eventually reached America.
 Various spellings of the family name.
 Jesse a merchant ; then a dyer.
 His elder brother, Melchior, in Holland.
 His younger brother, Gerard, in Holland.
 Brief of Gerard's history.
 Jesse reaches Holland, 1615.
 Baptisms of his children at Leyden.
 Jesse apparently pressed for money.
 Various impoverished leaders of men.
 Jesse interested in emigration to America.
 Condition of Dutch interests there.

The Pilgrim Fathers.
 Causes of the Walloon emigration to America.
 Swarms of Walloons in Holland.
 Beginnings of the Dutch West India Company.
 Holland in need of colonists.
 Jesse de Forest's visit to Sir Dudley Carleton.
 The "demands" of the Walloons; their devout spirit.
 Privileges demanded; oligarchical features.
 The round-robin of the colonists.
 Unsatisfactory reply of the Virginia Company.

CHAPTER V.

63

The Walloon Emigration of 1623-24.

Petition of April, 1622, to the Dutch authorities.
 The "Estates of Holland and West Friesland" approve the plan.
 Was this petition from Jesse de Forest?
 A delay of four months.
 De Forest's petition of Aug. 26, 1622.
 He is commissioned to enroll colonists.
 Military and colonizing plans of the W. I. Company.
 Jesse de Forest leaves Europe.
 Probabilities that he went to Guiana.
 Proof that Guiana was the "Wild Coast" (note).
 Voyages of the "June fleet."
 A colony on the river Oyapok.
 Petition of Gerard de Forest, Dec. 21, 1623.
 Sailing of Willekens, Dec. 21, 1623-Jan. 24, 1624.
 Jesse de Forest sails for Guiana, Dec. 23, 1624.
 The "New Netherland" sails for Guiana and the Hudson, March, 1624.
 Why de Forest went to South America.
 Few of the colonists to the Hudson known to us.
 The position saved from France.
 Beginning of planting; letter home.
 Nothing further concerning Jesse de Forest.
 Queries as to date of Hudson River settlement.

GENERAL CONTENTS. xi

CHAPTER VI. 80

Sequel of the Walloon Colony.

Continued history of the Walloon colony.
Of what race was Peter Minuit?
Antiquity and origin of his patronymic.
Vague statement by Domine Michaelius.
Investigations concerning him by Sardemann and Harless.
Minuit born in Wesel, of Walloon parents.
His relationships and history at Wesel.
Emigrates to Holland.
Appointed Director to conciliate the Walloons.
Reaches the Hudson, May, 1626.
Troubles at Fort Orange.
Minuit unites the colony at Manhattan.
Purchase of the Island, 1626.
Description of the village.
Arrival of Domine Michaelius, 1628.
His first communion with the Walloons.
His account of the settlement.
Sufferings and toils.
Arrival of the patroons, 1630.
Minuit removed, 1632.
His colony of New Sweden, and his death, 1638.

CHAPTER VII. 91

Permanent Settlement in America.

Permanent settlement of the de Forests in America.
Early years of Isaac de Forest.
The de Forests in Leyden after the death of Jesse.
Jean Mousnier La Montagne.
His marriage with Rachel de Forest, 1626.
His temporary emigration to Tobago.
Henry and Isaac de Forest reach New Amsterdam, 1636.
The La Montagnes follow, 1637.
First settlement of Harlem, N. Y., 1637.
Patents of land to Henry and Isaac.
The palisaded farmhouse.

Death of Henry de Forest, without heirs, 1637.
 Division of his estate.
 Death of Rachel, and marriage of Isaac, 1641.
 Account of the du Trieux family.
 Indian wars of Manhattan Island.
 Isaac de Forest leaves Harlem for New Amsterdam.
 His various offices ; great burgher, schepen, etc.
 Queries as to his property.
 His will, June 4th, 1672.
 Review of his colonial life.
 His death and that of his wife.

 CHAPTER VIII.

104

The Stratford (Conn.) de Forests.

Isaac's children ask letters of administration.
 Dispersion of the family.
 The Connecticut branch.
 David of Stratford.
 Date of baptism, and early history.
 Settles in Stratford, Conn.
 His marriage.
 The family name in the Stratford records.
 David's property and dwelling.
 Death, 1741, April 20.
 Inventory and division of his estate.
 Prosperity of his children.
 The yeomanry life of New England.
 Services of this branch in the Revolution.
 Benjamin de Forest 1st ; date of birth.
 Early years ; married to Esther Beardsley, 1744.
 Uneventful life.
 Benjamin de Forest 2nd, date of birth.
 Married to Mehetable Curtiss, 1773.
 Quiet usefulness during the Revolution.
 Church clerk ; death 1784, Aug. 5.
 Inventory and amount of estate.

CHAPTER IX.

David C. de Forest.

David C. De Forest ; birth-date and childhood.
 Early merchandising ; tragic close to it, 1796.
 First lieutenant in U. S. regular army, 1799.
 Goes to sea ; lands in Patagonia, 1801.
 Journey from Rio Janeiro to La Plata, 1802.
 Establishes a commission house at Buenos Ayres, 1802.
 Rapid prosperity.
 Political situation in Spanish America.
 Revolutions and Campaigns.
 English seize the country and are expelled.
 De Forest banished, 1809.
 Returns home and marries.
 Adventurous return to Buenos Ayres, 1812.
 Resumes the commission business.
 Driven into retirement by the war of 1812-14.
 Again resumes business, Dec. 1814.
 His letters and circulars.
 The Lynches and Zimmerman.
 True founder of the commission business at Buenos Ayres.
 Profuse expenses and large profits.
 Losses resulting from revolutions.
 Correspondence with John Jacob Astor, 1815.
 "Making a dash at the Dons."
 Half a dozen of privateers.
 Rich prizes, 1816.
 Profits to officers and crews.
 Profits to owners.
 Repatriation.
 Closing up business in Buenos Ayres.
 Liberal parting gifts ; manumission of slaves.
 Consul general from La Plata to the United States.

CHAPTER X.

David C. de Forest (continued).

- The Spanish American question at Washington.
- Secretary John Q. Adams and Representative Henry Clay.
- Adams opposes recognition of Spanish Americans.
- Clay's friendly motion defeated, 1818, March 24.
- De Forest's first interview with Adams, 1818, May 7.
- Continued pleas for recognition, 1818, Nov. and Dec.
- Adams declares Monroe's views to De Forest.
- De Forest nearly wins over the President.
- A cabinet meeting; temporizing decision.
- Adams and de Neuville, French minister.
- House enquiry into South Am. affairs, 1819, Jan. 14.
- Correspondence between Adams and De Forest.
- Their cool interview.
- Analysis of the diplomatic situation.
- The "Don" in society; at the President's.
- Cession of Florida vetoed by King Ferdinand.
- Disappointment of Monroe and Adams.
- Clay's partial victory for recognition, 1820, May 20.
- Celebration at New Haven, 1821, May 25.
- The Spanish Treaty, 1822, Feb. 22.
- Spanish American independence recognized, 1822, March 4.
- Second celebration at New Haven, 1822, May 25.
- The festivities; Percival's verses.
- De Forest resigns his consulate.
- New Haven's reception of La Fayette.
- View of the Marquis and of Mrs. De Forest.
- The De Forest medal and scholarships.
- The Don's private liberalities.
- His affection for his relatives; an instance.
- The lawsuit concerning privateering.
- Death, 1825, Feb. 22.

GENERAL CONTENTS.

XV

CHAPTER XI.

161

Other Children of Benj. de Forest 2nd.

- John H. De Forest, brother of David ; life of.
Merchandising at New Haven and Watertown.
His ventures in foreign commerce.
Capture by an English cruiser.
Brokerage and exporting at New York.
Commercial depression of 1818.
Cotton manufacturing at Humphreysville (Seymour).
Death, 1839.
Benjamin De Forest, brother of David ; life of.
His son John, and grandson Erastus Lyman, De Forest.
Ezra de Forest brother of David ; sketch of.

CONTENTS OF APPENDIX.

PART I.

169

Paragraph

1. List of the oldest extant records of Avesnes.
2. Gilles, Melchior 1st, and Melchior 2nd, de Forest.
3. Baltazar, son of Melchior 2nd.
4. Antoine, Jaspard, Gilles 2nd, and Melchior 3rd, de Forest.
5. Descendants of Baltazar.
6. Ancestors of "de Forest de Quartdeville." Simon.
7. Philippe de Forest.
8. Gilles 3rd de Forest.
9. Nicholas de Forest.
10. Other de Forests of Avesnes.
11. The Maillards of Avesnes.
12. The Du Fosset genealogy.
13. Registers of the Huguenot church of Sedan.
14. The du Cloux family of Sedan.
15. Other du Cloux, probably of the same stock.
16. Registers of the Walloon churches.
17. Holland records subsequent to Emigration.
18. Records referring to Jean, supposed brother of Jesse.
19. The du Forests of Tourcoing.
20. The du Trieux family ; other du Trieux.

PART II.

190

Papers of the Emigration of 1623-24.

21. Petition of Walloons and French concerning Virginia.
22. Agreement (round robin) of the Walloons.
23. Answer of the Virginia Company.
24. A Resolution of the States of Holland and West Friesland, April 21, 1622.
25. Resolution of the Representative Councils of the above, August 27, 1622.

Papers of the Emigration of 1636.

26. Hendrick de Forest; settlement of his estate.
27. Sale of Hendrick's property to La Montagne.
28. Briefs of papers relative to Hendrick de Forest (Albany).
29. Papers at Albany relative to Isaac de Forest.
30. Continued briefs concerning Isaac.
31. Renewed patent (1647) of 100 acres at Harlem to Isaac de Forest.
32. Briefs continued; 1649-1664.
33. Aldermanic Records of New Amsterdam.
34. Early de Forest wills in Surrogate's Office.
35. Will of Isaac de Forest (brief).
36. Printed records of N. Y. City.
37. Baptisms of Isaac de Forest's children.
38. Marriage records; form of the name.
39. Petition from children of Isaac de Forest.
40. Will of Henricus de Forest (brief).

PART III.

209

Modern Papers of Various Lineages.

41. Extracts from church registers of Stratford.
42. Vital Statistics from the Land Records.
43. Births of children of Benjamin 1st.
44. Stratford land records.
45. Probate Records at Stratford, at Fairfield, Ct.
46. Appraisal of David De Forest's estate.
47. Order for distribution of aforesaid estate.
48. Children and grandchildren of David De Forest.
49. Business book of Cong. Ch. at Huntington, Ct.—extracts from.
50. Registers of said church.
51. Will of Benjamin De Forest, 2nd.

PART IV.

219

52. Descendants of Isaac de Forest; the New York branches.
53. The Connecticut branches.

PART V.

236

54. Records concerning the de Forests of Quartdeville.

PART VI.

241

Concerning various de Forests, du Forests, de la Forests, and Forests, not held related to the de Forests of Avesnes.

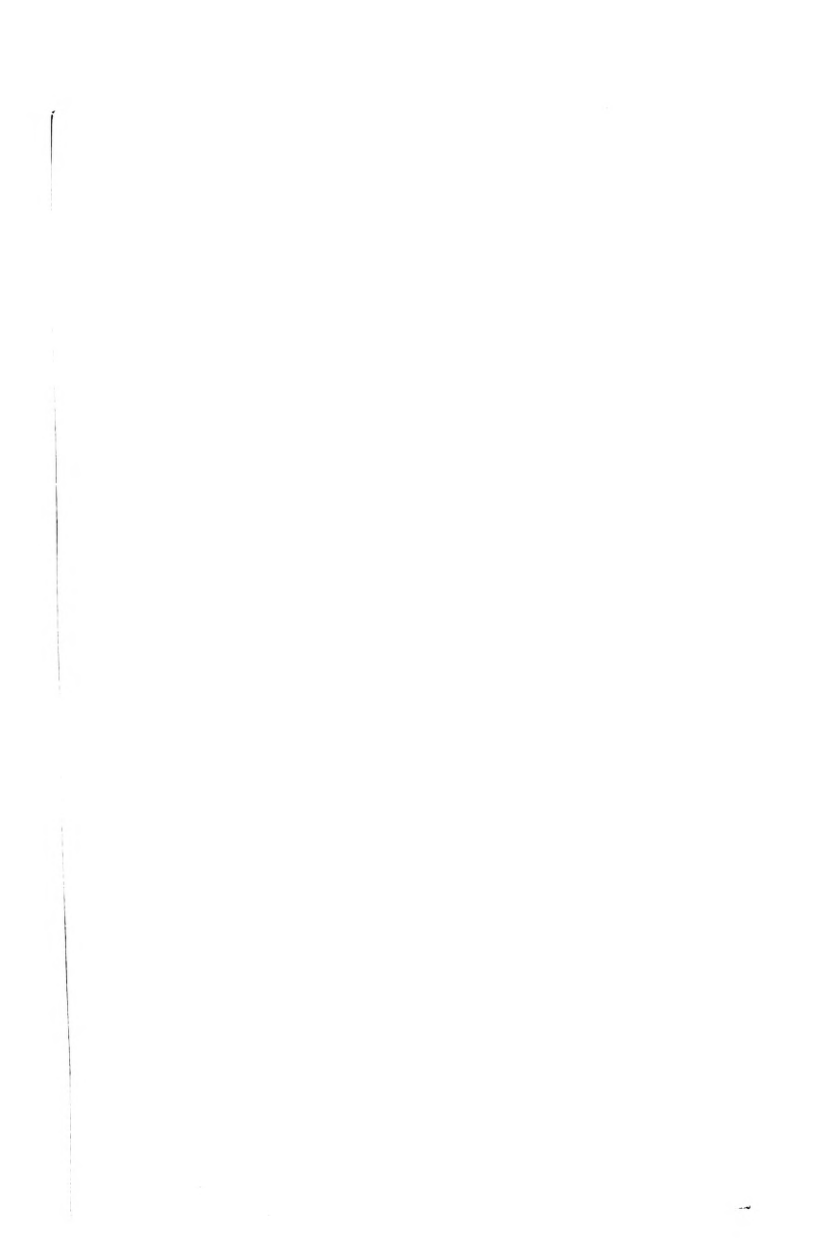
- Opening statement ; Jehans Forés, of Forest.
55. The de Forests "in Cambresis" : Genealogy 1st, from the Dossiers Bleus.
56. The de Forests "in Cambresis" : Genealogy 2nd, from the Nouveau d'Hozier.
57. The de Forests "in Cambresis" : Genealogy 3rd, Royal Library, Brussels.
58. The de Forests "in Cambresis" : Genealogy 4th, library of Valenciennes.
59. The de Forests "in Cambresis" : Genealogy 5th, de la Gorgue Rosny.
60. Documents concerning the de Forests "in Cambresis."
61. Various de Forests of Cambrai.
62. De Forests of Hainaut.
63. De Forests of Valenciennes.
64. De Forests of Lille ; manor of Courtisempère.
65. De Forests of Lille ; manor of Chastel at Roncq.
66. De Forests of Lille ; manor of Warlaing.
67. De Forests of Lille ; manor of Halluin.
68. De Forests of Forest-Montiers, Picardy.
69. De Forests of various provinces of France.
70. De Forests in the Cabinet des Titres, vol. 1195.
71. De Forests from Dom Villevielle, vol. 40, and other Mss.
72. De Forests of Alcmaar, Holland.
73. Families named Forest.
74. Families named De la Forest.
75. The same ; from the Collection Clairambault.
76. The same ; from the Cabinet des Titres, vol. 1195.
77. The same ; from the Cabinet des Titres (Dossiers blancs), vol. 1196.
78. Blazonings from Le Carpentier's Hist. du Cambresis.

ILLUSTRATIONS.

THE OLD CHURCH OF AVESNES (Tower repaired),	Frontispiece
Arms of DE FOREST DE QUARTDEVILLE, . . .	Facing page 15
Arms of DE RESTEAU, Hainaut, (I); and DU FOSSET, Mons, (II),	Facing page 165

VERSES.

NEW YORK BAY IN MAY, 1624,	vi
OLD TIME VILLAGE,	166
THE VANISHED CASTLE,	276



INTRODUCTION.

The root of the patronymic De Forest is the Teutonic word *forst*, pronounced by the Hollanders and Flemings *worst*.

It was brought over the Rhine by conquering Germanic hordes, and was ere long latinized by their Gallo-Roman subjects into *forestus*, which in its earlier usage meant a hunting park, and not merely a region covered with trees.

The Frankish kings established many such parks in their dominions, some for their own pleasure, others for the benefit of monasteries, others for favorite officers and courtiers. It resulted that in France and the French Netherlands there sprang up nearly forty villages and hamlets variously called Forest, La Forest and Le Forest; for the word was formerly either masculine or feminine, and in some dialects needed no definite article. Hence, too, in the course of centuries came many families who styled themselves de Forest, or de la Forest, or du Forest, most of them lordly possessors of demesne and castle, but others simple burghers or perhaps peasants.

For in ancient days the "noble particle" *de* did not necessarily signify nobility. It was sometimes used by plain people to express *provenance*, that is topo-

graphical or geographical origin. For instance, wood-chopper Jean, by way of explaining that he dwelt *beyond the hill*, might call himself Jean *d'Outremont*, a name not unlike the English *Overhill* or *Underhill*. Or carpenter Jacques, of Vitry, who should remove to some neighboring borough, might there record himself as *de Vitry*, meaning from *Vitry*. It is true that such cases were not very numerous, and that a prefix thus assumed was generally soon relinquished. But the fact that such cases did exist debars us from affirming that a family bearing the *de* was consequently noble, unless the nobility is established by strong circumstantial evidence or by indisputable documents.

It was that Turveydrop of regal deportment, Louis XIV, who stamped the now precious particle as noble and as legally appropriate to nobles alone. Since his time it is considered indecorous and ridiculous for Frenchmen of commonplace birth and position to use it except as an inherent part of the family name. *Devitry*, for example, would be proper for carpenter Jacques and his humble descendants; but *de Vitry* would be reserved for persons of blue blood and honorable station.

De Forest is a very ancient name in France and the French-speaking Netherlands. Jean Le Carpentier, who in 1660 published a History of the Cambresis, assigns to the year 1096 a knight called Herbertus de Foresto, on the faith of a document known as The Tourney of Anchin, perhaps not more reliable than the famous Battle Abbey Roll of England. But there are various authentic entries of the name in the 12th and 13th centuries.

Between 1111 and 1120, the exact date not being discoverable, Gerardus Forest (without a *de*) witnessed a donation made to St. Amand-lez-puers by Clemence, countess of Flanders and duchess of Lorraine. (Cartulaire of St. Amand; Bibliothèque Nationale, Paris.)

In 1164 Gerardus de Forest, perhaps a son of the above, witnessed a charter of St. Amand-en-Pévelé. (Cart. de St. Amand-en-Pévelé; Bibl. Nat.)

In 1171 Hugues Forest and his brother Gilles donated to the abbey of Marchiennes certain lands situated at Ranival near Saudemont. (Collection Moreau, t. 77, p. 31; Bibl. Nat.)

In 1180 Ansel de Forest knight, and Pierre Minutus a Cambresian knight, are recorded as having sold certain church tenths to a citizen of Arras named Adam. (Le Glay; Topographie de l'anc. Cambresis, p. 721).

In 1221 Gautier de Forest, provost of Quesnoy and bailli of Ghent, confirmed a claim of the abbey of Marchiennes, signing with a seal showing a *tree*. (Archives du Nord; abbaye de Marchiennes, Bibl. Nat.)

In 1228 Walter de Forest (perhaps the same with the above Gautier), bailli of the counties of Flanders and Hainaut, assisted by Otho de Trazegnies and Fastré de Ligne knights, terminated a difference between the abbey of Cambron and Ivon de Neuville knight. (Cartulaire de l'abbaye de Cambron, p. 789.)

In 1233 Pierre de Forest witnessed a donation made by Bauduin d' Aubencheul to the abbey of Notre Dame du Verger, diocese of Cambray. (Titres sur l'Artois; Bibl. Nat.)

In 1250 Walter de Forest and wife sold land at Forest, apparently in Cambresis, to the monastery of Chateau l'Abbaye. (Le Glay; Archives de Chateau l'Abbaye, p. 171.)

Less certain, but still probable enough, are Pierre de Forest who appears in a manuscript of the abbey of St. Aubert, dated 1195; and Anselm de Forest who signed as witness to a donation in 1245, and as witness to a sale in 1266. (Le Carpentier's *Histoire du Cambresis*.)

But was "de Forest" a true patronymic in all or in any of the above cases? Or was it merely an "estate name," practically equivalent to a declaration of lordship, and indicating that the person thus styled held a fief called Forest? There were undoubtedly instances where the seeming family name was not one. The now extinct but once notable marquises *du Forest*, of the ancient province of Artois, were by descent *de la Tramerie*. Another case in point is that of Robert Le Tone, "seigneur *de Forest*, councillor of the duke of Burgundy and governor of the bailiwicks of Arras, Avesnes and Aubigny," who is repeatedly mentioned in the Archives du Nord between 1438 and 1468.

On the other hand, but likewise showing that title-name and family-name were not necessarily the same, there was an ancient breed in Languedoc, seigneurs of Tournoir and Fontbuzard and marquises of Piquecot, who bore the patronymic de Forest.* In fine, it is not possible to say when this particular family name threw off its original significance of possession, or of *provenance*, and became a hereditary mark of consanguinity.

* Appendix, par. 70.

De Forest, whether considered as patronymic or as title, must not be confounded with *de la Forest*. In all the French archives with which I am acquainted I have never found these two names used as interchangeable. Hence the many families styled *de la Forest* must be set altogether apart from our history as having no connection with us, whether in blood or heraldry. Of course they originated in manors or villages called *La Forest*, while *du Forests* sprang up in *Le Forests*, and *de Forests* in *Forests*.

Meanwhile, owing probably to similarity of appearance, but surely not to identity of origin, these two latter names, *du Forest* and *de Forest*, often pass in ancient records as synonymous. In general there is a distinction between them; but a careless archivist or a new place of residence naturally brings about confusion; for instance, the *de Forests of Avesnes* are sometimes written down as *du Forests at Leyden*.

Thus it is impossible to decide positively whether we are related to any of the various breeds called *du Forest*, or whether our name may not have begun life under that form, though this last supposition is improbable. Of both *de Forests* and *du Forests* there were several families, originating in different places and bearing different armorial emblems. One knightly race, already mentioned, dwelt at *Forest in Cambresis*; there were other *Forests*, of one prefix or another, at *Mons, Ath, Le Cauchie and Avesnes in Hainaut*; one or two, each, in the territories of *Namur, Brabant, Liege, Tournay and Douai*; others at *Quesnoy, Soignies, Tourcoing, Valenciennes, Bavay, Arras and Courtrai*; others still at *Lille, Halluin, Warlaing, La Mortagne, Menin, Courtisempère and Chastel-à-*

Roncq; also in Picardy, Normandy, Poitou, Auvergne, Languedoc, Dauphiny and doubtless other provinces. They were in all grades of society from burghers and landed gentry up to marquises. Their various blazonries would cover several pages, and suggest many diverse origins, though of course "differences" in heraldry do not surely prove difference of blood. At all events, it is obvious that all these families could not have sprung from one stock, and that identity of name is not equivalent to identity of race.*

What then does establish a pedigree? the American reader may enquire. Documents! indisputable documents for every generation! such documents as would win an estate in court. It is greatly to be regretted that this fact is not better known to the authors of our family histories.

A few words must be given to the bogus coats of arms which have been attributed to the American de Forests by certain fraudulent heraldic hucksters. A rogue of this class in Paris palmed off upon one of my distant relatives a slightly altered copy of the shield of the Counts *de la Forest* of Picardy, bearing *argent, three trees vert; a chief azure with three stars of the field*. Another impostor, well known in New York, sold to another relative *two* (!) coats of arms, one belonging to a gentry race of Bretagne named

* See Appendix, paragraph 55 to paragraph 78, for many briefs of records and many blazonings of arms pertaining to families whose names sprang from the word "forest". Other names were far more multitudinous; for instance, du Bois has more than 200 coats of arms; see Rietstap's *Armorial Général* for du Bois and Dubois.

de la Forest, the other a purely fictitious affair which sprang from the imagination of a French pedigreek known as Count Bessas de la Megie.

This last, a specially gorgeous imposition, was blazoned, *argent, three crescents sable; a chief azure showing three stags' heads or; coronet, of a marquis; supports, two lions*. It was confidently attributed by Bessas de la Megie to Forêt in Vermandois, arrondissement of St. Quentin, department of Aisnes, ancient province of Picardy. There, up to the Revolution, (affirmed the count) stood the "magnificent abode" of our forefathers, and its foundation walls were still visible in 1826.

As this story seemed too sweet to be true I had investigations made concerning it at St. Quentin, and subsequently in the National Library at Paris. The village of Forêt and its humble archives appeared, but not the faintest trace of a *de Forest* family, whether gentle or simple, either there or in the whole neighboring region. The germ of the coat of arms was finally discovered hundreds of miles from Vermandois. In Auvergne, during the year 1581, died Jean *Forest*, counsellor of the *Cour des Aides*, bearing *argent, three crescents sable, a chief azure charged with three stags' heads or*. (Cabinet des titres, pièces originales, dossier 26991; Bibl. Nat. Paris.)

The arms of this respectable provincial lawyer, whose name only approximated to *de Forest*, had furnished the foundation for Bessas de la Megie's grandiose superstructure. Fortunately no American *de Forest* ever seriously accepted the coroneted imposition, a fact which speaks well for the common sense of the family.

Another blazoning came much nearer to convincing me that it was the true heraldic device of my ancestors. About eighteen miles westward from Avesnes, at a village called Forest, dwelt for two hundred years, and possibly for over four hundred, a knightly race known as the de Forests of that ilk (*du dit lieu*), or the de Forests in Cambresis, or the de Forests of Aniche. According to Le Carpentier, whose genealogical second sight borders on the preternatural, they boasted a descent from Herbertus de Foresto of the first crusade, and a further claim from the illustrious old warrior house de Trith, which involved possibilities remounting to the counts of Hainaut and the regal stocks of Hugh Capet and Charles Martel.* About 1500 A. D. the only surviving male line died down into an heiress named Jeanne; and in 1572 her son, François Le Louchier, sold the manor of Forest, whereafter the brood suddenly vanished from record.

Meanwhile, from 1494, if not earlier, down to 1572, and much later, the neighboring de Forests of Avesnes (ancestors of the American line) existed as honorable burghers, connected by marriage and blood with armorial races. Both families, as will be explained hereafter, were allied with the Resteaus, or de Resteaus, bearing *sable, a rateau or in pale*. Now, were the burgher de Forests of Avesnes a cadet branch of the knightly de Forests "of the said place"? Had we a right to grasp their shield of *sable, three crescents argent*, and echo their vainglorious war cry *Trith?*

* Jean Le Carpentier, already mentioned, author of a History of Cambresis.

Considering identity of name and proximity of residence, this assumption seemed reasonable, and for a time I supposed that I should eventually discover documentary proofs of it. But after a long search, perhaps an exhaustive one, I must admit failure. We may be distantly related to "de Forest in Cambresis," or we may not be, and probably not.

Some two hundred years ago this same question was doubtless considered, and was apparently decided in the negative, by the so-called "de Forests of Quartdeville," the only offshoot of the Avesnes stock which has officially recorded and legally borne a coat of arms. For it does not appear that Jesse de Forest or any of his refugee relatives made a heraldic registration in Holland; at all events, no such registration now exists among the State Archives at the Hague or the documents of the *Hooge Raad Van Adel*.^{*} Hence in a quest for authenticated arms belonging to our family, we are driven to appeal for information to the branch of Quartdeville.

Towards 1690, nearly a century after our emigrant ancestor quitted Avesnes, one Nicholas de Forest of that city removed to Tournay. According to his descendants he belonged to a burgher family which could be traced back to the latter years of the fifteenth century. From this statement we may infer that even

^{*} The "High Council of Nobility," similar to the *Commission de Noblesse* of Belgium rather than to the College of Heralds of England. It only dates from 1814 and naturally has few records. During the lifetime of the Dutch Republic there was no authority or law concerning heraldic distinctions, and every man took what arms he liked best, as with us. So I am informed by the Secretary of the *Hooge Raad*.

in 1690 the Avesnes de Forests lacked records anterior to the capture and destruction of the place in 1477 by the forces of Louis XI. *

But let us proceed with the emigrant to Tournay. The papers of his branch record him as son of a preceding Nicholas, who was son of a Philippe de Forest mayor of Avesnes, deceased in 1650. The records of the city in their present imperfect state do not make all this out clearly, and fail to show precisely how the Quartdeville line was connected with ours. But those records were much more complete two centuries ago, and we may assume that emigrant Nicholas knew the immediate preceding history of his family, especially as he was a mature man and a notable lawyer when he registered his claims to gentryhood.

Obviously he was a person of more than ordinary character and intelligence. On the 22nd June, 1691 he was admitted as advocate to the court of the parliament of Tournay; on the 28th October, 1696 he was appointed counsellor to the same Parliament by letters royal; and at his death on the 21st December, 1730 he was *chevalier doyen* of the counsellors. Is it likely that such a man would be ignorant of his grandfather, or dare to invent fraudulent pedigree and heraldries! In default of satisfactory documentary evidence in our hands, we may be reasonably sure that he possessed it and made honest use of it.

* Among the genealogical printed pamphlets in the National Library at Paris are two necrological notices of Eugene Alexandre Nicholas de Forest, of this line, who died 1839. They contain information concerning the ancestry and relationships of the family. Also there are documents in the *Nouveau d'Hozier* (vol. 138, page 4). Bibl. Nat., Paris.

Shortly after being appointed counsellor he presented a coat of arms for registration. The matter was passed upon by the general commissioners of heraldries for the realm; and on the 6th September, 1697 they ordained that these arms should be determined (*reglées*) as follows: *Or, a lion gules holding with both forepaws a pennon of the same; coupé with azure, three martlets argent.*

We do not know how this shield originated. It may have been first granted to Nicholas de Forest himself, who as knight counsellor-at-law was *messire* and *gentilhomme*, and could properly bear armorial distinctions. It may have come down to him from some ancestor who is also our ancestor. It may have been a compromise between two shields previously claimed. Obviously it is impossible as yet to decide whether the American de Forests have or have not a right to make use of it.

It was entered in the Armorial of Flanders, vol. 1, page 58, and was permanently borne by Nicholas de Forest and his descendants. In the time of his great-grandchildren it was again passed upon and certified as correct by Ambroise Louis Marie d'Hozier, "judge of arms of the noblesse of France and verifier of armories."*

* "Nous, Ambroise Louis Marie d'Hozier, chevalier, ancien président de la Cour des Comptes, Aides et Finances de Normandie, ancien juge d'armes de la noblesse de France, verificateur des armoiries,

"Certifions a qui il appartiendra que les armoiries de messire Eugene Alexandre Nicholas de Forest, de Douai, member de la chambre des deputes des departements, sont *d'or d un lion de gueules tenant de ses deux pattes de devant, une banderolle de même, coupé d'azur d trois merlettes d'argent*, telles qu'elles sont employées

The volume of the *Nouveau d'Hozier* which preserves this certificate also contains extracts from church registers of Douai concerning the family. It appears therefrom that the above Nicholas de Forest married Jeanne Françoise Claire Cordouan, and that out of their six children five took religious vows.

The eldest was Jacques Nicholas Marie de Forest, seigneur of Quartdeville, Lewarde, Bailleul and other manors. He became advocate in the parliament of Flanders in 1722; in 1731 he succeeded his father as knight-counsellor, the office being hereditary; in 1751 he was *président à mortier*; in 1770, deceased. He married Louise Therese Dubois, daughter of Jean Baptiste Ignace Joseph Dubois knight, seigneur of Wadelencourt, deputy in the Estates of Tournaisis. Their only child was the following:

Messire Jean Baptiste François de Forest, chevalier, seigneur of Quartdeville, etc., counsellor in the parliament of Flanders in 1758, dean of the *présidents à mortier*, and deceased in 1796. He married in 1761 Marie Anne Françoise Ingiliard, daughter of Eugene Marie Ingiliard, seigneur of Wattines and other manors, deputy of the Estates of Lille, knight of the royal order of St. Louis, and ex-lieutenant colonel of cavalry in the regiment of Bourgogne. Jean Baptiste François de Forest had six children, of whom the eldest was the following:

dans l'Armorial General de Flandre, T. I, p. 58, art. 33, et ont été réglées en faveur de Nicholas de Forest, conseiller au parlement de Flandre, bisaieul du dit Messire Eugene Alexandre Nicholas, par ordonnance des commissaires generaux du 6 Sept. 1697." *Nouveau d'Hozier*, vol. 138.

See App., par. 54, for translation, and other papers.

Eugene Alexandre Nicholas de Forest, baptized at Douai, June 23, 1762, was seigneur of Quartdeville, while a younger brother, Jacques Nicholas Marie, was seigneur of Lewarde. He became first president of the royal court of Douai, deputy from the department *du Nord*, commander of the legion of honor, and peer of France, as a senator was then called. He married in 1788 Philomene, daughter of Julien Louis count de la Grandville, of an ancient family of Bretagne. He died August 16, 1839, leaving four daughters and no son. At present the family archives are in the hands of a great-grandson, Imbert de la Phalèque, of Englos, near Hambourdin, *Nord*.

A niece of Eugene Alexander Nicolas de Forest, daughter of the seigneur of Lewarde, married Henry Joseph, count de Franqueville de Bourlon. In an earlier generation, as far back as 1722, another relative, Marie Claire Antoinette de Forest, had married a baron Dubois of Harnes.

Still further back, on the 21st December, 1685, one Florence de Forest of Avesnes, either sister or cousin of the founder of the Quartdeville branch, married Daniel Cornil Ofarel esquire, provost of the city in 1694 and 1696, and brother of a Thadée Ofarel who was created count in 1691.* The two Ofarels, origi-

* *Nobiliaire des Pays Bas*, 2nd vol., 572; also the following article in the *Observateur d'Avesnes*, dated May 10, 1895.

"Thadéus Ofarel was created Count d'Ofarel, he and his descendants male and female, by letters of noblesse, dated 15 November, 1691 (*Nobiliaire des Pays Bas*); by other letters of September, 1692, he obtained the privilege that, in default of heirs, his nearest relative might inherit said title.

"Daniel-Cornil Ofarel, esquire, provost of Avesnes in 1694 and 1696, married at Avesnes the 31st December, 1685, Florence

nally O'Farrels, bore the arms of that family as given in "Burke," and were the offspring of an Irish refugee. The posterity of Florence (de Forest) Ofarel continued in Avesnes prosperously, one of them a knight, others esquires and seigneurs of the various manors of Fayt, Listebote, Lillee, Joinville, Caufour and Escaufour.

But enough has been told to show the honorable social position of our European relatives of modern times. It is noteworthy that they, like their ancestors so far as traceable, always made use of the *particule*

de Forest, and died the 1st January, 1716. We published, on the 30th January, 1894, a statement concerning the Irish origin of the Ofarel family.

"Certain of the descendants were :

"Jean Daniel Ofarel, knight, seigneur of Fayt, counsellor in the parliament (high court) of Flanders.

"Daniel Nicholas Ofarel, esquire, seigneur of Listebote, baptised at Avesnes 25th June, 1694. He married ; 1st on the 27th November, 1717, Marie Phillippine Preseau, who died at Avesnes 13 July, 1732, aged 34 years ; 2nd, on the 10th February, 1734, Helene Terese de Bolesse, deceased before her husband who died 22nd February, 1756.

"He had : (A) Daniel Nicholas Louis Thadée Mathieu Ofarel, knight, seigneur of Lillee, of Joinville, of Listebote, born at Avesnes 22nd September, 1731, and married ; 1st, 8th May, 1757, Sabine Josephine Gossuin d'Angreau who died 29th Oct., 1760 ; 2nd, to Marie Anne Pauline Joseph du Charnac. (Children omitted.)

"(B) François Louis Dominique Ofarel, dec'd 15th October, 1736, 3 years old,

"(C) Jeanne Françoise Ofarel, who married 26th April, 1741, at the age of twenty-one, Pierre François Ghislain Joseph du Pamart, esquire, seigneur of Caufour and Escaufour.

"From this union sprang," etc., etc. (*L'Observateur d'Avesnes*, 16 Mai, 1895.)

noble. This fact indicates a belief in original nobility of birth, and perhaps the possession of evidence thereof, now vanished.

My search for this evidence, and for all records concerning the family anterior to 1494, has been so persevering and widespread that I have little hope of further discoveries. The destruction of the archives of Avesnes in 1477, and their fragmentary condition between that date and 1620, seem to put an end to expectation. But it must be remembered that documents of the past occasionally come to light in an unhoped-for manner. It cost a century of research to establish the true transatlantic history of those famed and well-descended families, the Washingtons and Lees of Virginia.

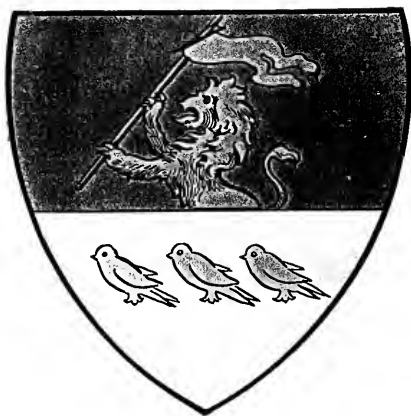
CHAPTER I.

AVESNES AND ITS EARLY DE FORESTS.

The word Walloon will be used so often in this narrative that it ought to be defined. It represents the Belgæ of Cæsar, the rudest and most warlike of the peoples whom he styled Gauls, although Gaulish the Walloons are not, unless Gaul means Kelt with a cross of Teuton. By Kelt I do not intend the Ivernian or Iberian, but the broad-skulled race of France, the Alps and the Danubian valley, as described by Professor Wm. Z. Ripley in his "Races of Europe."

Beaten upon by the Gauls, the Cimbri, the Romans and the Franks, the Walloons stubbornly retain their identity and a certain definiteness of boundary, and number towards four millions of well-looking, strongly-built, brunet-skinned and generally dark-haired people, industrious, fervid in temper and always excellent soldiers. Nearly a million of them exist in the French departments of Nord, Aisne, Ardenne and Calais, and nearly three millions in the Belgian provinces of Hainaut, Namur, Liege, Brabant and Luxemburg.

The Reformation early gained a footing among the Walloons, as well as among their half-brothers and neighbors on the south, the Picards, but was eventually trampled out with immense effort and cruelty by Charles V and Philip II, to the great advantage of the neighboring countries. A horde of laborious refugees planted their industries in Holland, England



DE FOREST OF QUARTDEVILLE.

and Wurtemberg. "To the Walloons," says Brodhead, "the Dutch were probably indebted for much of the repute which they gained as a nation in many branches of manufactures." Another modern investigator, the Netherland historical scholar Asher, declares that the whole greatness of Holland sprang from her hospitality to a hundred thousand exiled Walloon families.

Why did the Walloons fly from the Spaniards, instead of fighting them? The reason is that their country is not easily defensible; it is mainly destitute of mountains, of difficult rivers, of morasses, canals and dykes; it is a fertile prairie easily traversed by regular armies, and offering ground everywhere for the action of cavalry. The vast forest of Arden, which once stretched from the Rhine to the ocean, and which no doubt helped the Belgæ to beat off the Cimbri and Teutons, diminished centuries ago to scattered woodlands. Thus there was no possibility in the southern Netherlands of establishing centres and lines of resistance against Alva and Don John.

Among the notable Walloon provinces is Hainaut, the land of those Nervians whom Cæsar celebrates as the bravest of the Belgæ, the native land of Baldwin emperor of Byzantium, of Queen Philippa of England, of Froissart the modern Herodotus, and of the ill-fated Egmonts. For centuries it was a famous principality, often practically independent, its counts intermarrying with royal races and boasting the blood of Hugh Capet, Alfred of England, Charlemagne and the Merwings. Since 1814 it has been divided, the northern and larger part belonging to Belgium, the remainder to France.

In French Hainaut, not far from the frontier and nearly on a direct line between Paris and Brussels, lies the little fortress-city of Avesnes, containing about four thousand six hundred inhabitants. It was founded in the eleventh century by Werric, originally lord of Leuze, a warlike and powerful noble who had inherited fiefs from the Regniers, the early race of the counts of Hainaut. In 1100 one of his female descendants married Goswin d'Oisy of Cambrai, and established a new house which gave birth to Jacques d'Avesnes, a famous crusader who in 1191 fell in battle against Saladin. Later there were other marriages, founding successive lines of great nobles, and passing the city from family to family like an heirloom. An heiress named Marie carried it to the house of Chatillon, otherwise of Blois, otherwise of Bretagne, and eventually of Albret. In 1495 Louise d'Albret married Charles de Croy, first prince of Chimay, whose son Charles 2d of Croy was first duke of Arschot. This event brings us down to the earliest date (1494) when the de Forests are known to have inhabited Avesnes.

But Avesnes has belonged to various powers as well as to various families. Through many harassing vicissitudes of fightings and treaties it has been subject to the early Germanic empire, the house of Capet, the house of Bavaria, the house of Burgundy, the Spaniards, the Austrians, and modern France. One marvels how the town has contrived to exist amidst this eternal snatching and tearing of quarrelsome powers. And in fact the hand of war has done it no little mischief.

In June, 1477, not long after the death of Charles the Bold, his rejoicing rival Louis XI of France sent a powerful army northward, under Dammartin, to seize upon the Burgundian Netherlands. This host of savage freebooters slipped into unlucky little Avesnes while it was arranging a capitulation. Then came unprovoked pillage, arson and massacre. The majority of the citizens had their throats cut, and not a building escaped burning except a hospital, a monastery and eight dwellings. The town hall and the churches, with their records and monuments, perished.

Whether any de Forest fell in this tragedy, or whether the family dwelt in the city thus early, it is impossible to discover. Our name cannot be positively identified with Avesnes until seventeen years after the disaster of 1477. It is worth noting, by the way, that while this date is modern history for Europe, it is prehistoric for America. Dammartin's murderers and incendiaries howled through perishing Avesnes fifteen years before Columbus left Palos, and forty-seven years before Verazzano happened upon the bay of New York.

I can give no particulars as to when or by whom the town was rebuilt. For many years and through two wars Louis XI and his son Charles VIII strove in vain to wrest the Walloon provinces from Mary of Burgundy and her husband Maximilian of Austria, afterward emperor of Germany. Meantime, somehow or other, Avesnes arose from its ashes and became a fortress-city once more.

War after war raged around it, causing it to change masters. In 1559 it belonged to the French, but was

ceded by them to the Spaniards in the treaty of Cateau Cambresis. There appears to have been a spice of Protestantism, at least of the political sort, among its burghers, although they did not openly aid the Huguenot rising in 1566 of LeCateau and Valenciennes. In 1577 Avesnes joined Valenciennes, Landrecies and Quesnoy in refusing to sign the act of submission which had been prepared by Don John of Austria and published in the name of the provinces of Hainaut and Artois.* Were there punishments for this recalcitrancy, and did any of the de Forests suffer? It is barely possible that this query might be answered from documents in the archives of Spain.

In the early campaigns of the French revolution, some of the records of Avesnes were used for cart-ridges, while others were taken to stronger fortresses for safe keeping, with the result of dispersion and much loss. Years later, during the Prussian invasion of 1815, the town was nearly destroyed by the explosion of a magazine.

No marvel that the archives are sadly incomplete. The earliest known are in the *Bibliothèque Nationale* at Paris, beginning in 1488 and extending to 1514. † At Avesnes the oldest preserved volumes commence in 1529, and are sadly fragmentary down to 1619, when the first registers of baptism and marriage make their appearance, followed in 1654 by the first probate papers. At Lille also, among the archives of the

* Diplomatic correspondence of the Tuscan ambassador in France.

† A folio of 880 pages, in the National Archives, register R⁴ 1109, containing an Inventory of Documents of Avesnes, Accounts of the Domaine, etc., etc.

department du Nord, there are records from Avesnes, but of little consequence to the de Forests.

Mortuary inscriptions contribute no information of importance to this family history. The oldest existing cemetery was laid out in the opening decade of the XIXth century. Vanished are the chapels, cloisters and ecclesiastical residences which formerly belonged to the churches of Avesnes, and sheltered scores on scores of funeral monuments. A few epitaphs remain in the venerable church of St. Nicolas, and a few others are preserved in the little museum of the city. Some of them concern ancient *grandeės*, once hereditary lords of the *peçrage-city* or its appointed governors.

For instance, the very noble prince Oliver of Châtillon, of Blois and of Bretagne, count of Penthievre and Perigord, viscount of Limoges, lord of Avesnes, Landrecies and Nouvion, heir of the duchy of Bretagne, etc., born in 1388, deceased the 28th September, 1433.

Also, the very noble princess Jeanne de Lalaing, heiress of Quievrain, spouse in second marriage of the very noble Oliver of Bretagne, who survived him until the 10th of April, 1466.

Also, Philippe 2nd of Croy, first duke of Arschot, prince of Chimay, count of Beaumont, lord of Avesnes and Landrecies, *grandee* of Spain, grand-bailiff of Hainaut, deceased April, 1594.

Also, Jean d'Anneux, knight, lord of Abancourt, Warlu and Buat, baron of Crevecoeur, first peer of Cambresis, governor of Avesnes in 1588, husband of Charlotte de Brabant, deceased in 1629.

Also, messire Philibert de Vere, St. Julien and La Mousche, knight of the golden fleecce, grand maitre d'hotel for the emperor Charles V, with his wife damoiselle Marguerite de Lannoy, the latter deceased in 1497, the former in 1512.

There are other nobles, eight or ten clericals and nuns, with a dozen or so of burghers. The two following epitaphs are the only ones which have so much as an indirect connection with the de Forests.

Honorable persons André Franquart, receiver of the city and peerage of Avesnes, deceased 15th March, 1557, and damoiselle Aldegonde Marin his wife, deceased 14th February, 1562.

Reverend and worthy person messire André Franquart, curate of Avesnes, canon of Cambray, archdeacon of the Cambresis, bishop of Calcedoine, suffragant and vicar general of the archbishop of Cambray, deceased 17th August, 1583.*

As will be explained later, the family of the above named Aldegonde Marin, wife of André Franquart the elder, was connected by marriage with the de Forests. It is also worth noting that as late as 1709 one Jacques Francquart, no doubt a descendant of André, was provost of Avesnes, while two de Forests, Philip and Gilles, were associated with him in the business affairs of the city. †

* The above epitaphs and others were kindly furnished by M. Albert Gravet of Avesnes.

† Records of Avesnes in the Documents of the Orleans family in the Bibliothèque Nationale, Paris.

GILLES DE FOREST (1494-1509).

In the National Library at Paris, among the Avesnes records already described as there preserved, we find the earliest mention of one of our family. From the festival of St. John the Baptist in 1494 to the same date in 1509, the receiver of taxes for the city and peerage was Gilles de Forest.* That is the first and the last and the whole of our knowledge of him. We suppose that he was the great great grandfather of our emigrant to America in 1623; but we have no proof of it excepting the probabilities arising from identity of patronymic and of residence.

Nor do we certainly know to what class of society he belonged. Although a dweller and office-holder in a small city, he may have sprung from a manorial race. In his time the distinction between the burghers and the landed gentlemen was not radical nor broad.

For instance, in 1420 Thierry seigneur de Forest, esquire (bearing *a cross held by a savage and supported by two lions*), was admitted to the burgherhood of Valenciennes by a resolution of the aldermanic court of that city. (Trésor Généalogique of Villevielle, Bibl. Nat. Paris.)

In 1421 Jacquemart de Forest, esquire, probably a son of Thierry, a native of Forest-les-Mortagnes, was admitted in like manner. (Trésor Généalogique.)

In 1457 Alard du Forest (bearing *a bend charged with a star and acc. by six quintefeilles en orle*) is recorded as alderman of Halluin. (Archives du Nord; chapitre de Lille.)

* Records of Avesnes in the National Archives; accounts of the domaine of Avesnes; Bibl. Nat. Paris.

In 1457 Louis de Forest, bearing the same arms, with a *différence*, was bailiff of the aldermanwick of Halluin. (Archives du Nord ; chapitre de Lille ; Bibl. Nat. Par.)

It is possible, therefore, that Gilles de Forest the collector, though a burgher, might be of gentry stock. Indeed, it is probable that such was the case, for he and his descendants obviously had some now forgotten reason to make use of the *de*, holding fast to it as they did invariably and for centuries.

We must remember that the burghers, though not eminent in the social hierarchy, belonged to the classes rather than to the masses. The word burgher was in some sense a title, always indicating position, and sometimes descent. It could not be claimed by every respectable denizen of a town, not even if he were also an old resident and a property holder. A burgher must belong to the small class of electors ; he must have a right to vote, and he must be eligible to high offices ; in some cities, at least during certain periods, he must be of electoral descent. Thus the burgherhood formed a sort of patricianate, resembling somewhat that of ancient Rome, doing nearly all the municipal law-making and governing, and frequently managing the finances according to its own pleasure.

A rich merchant might be a burgher, or he might not be one ; it depended somewhat on his descent and on the offices which he had held ; perhaps it depended even more on his possessions in land. A fief of land was often bought by a city family with the purpose of rising in society. Such a fief once obtained, the owner took the name of it as an "estate

name," while his children perhaps dropped the original patronymic as vulgar. A case in point is that of the Caveliers, worthy merchants of old-time Rouen, who purchased a country-place called La Salle (the Hall), and drew therefrom a title-name for their children. Robert Cavelier of this family is known to history as La Salle the discoverer of the mouth of the Mississippi.

Thus arose the "bourgeois-gentilhomme," a sort of patrician whom knights and bannerets scoffed at, but with whose race they often intermarried. "If a citizen fails," says an old French writer, "the nobles scorn him; if he prospers, they sue for the hand of his daughter."

But we must have done with guessing at the origin of Collector Gilles de Forest, and the *raison d'être* of the "noble particle" which precludes his patronymic.

Twenty-five years after his disappearance from the magic lantern of record there was another man of his family name in Avesnes, whom we provisionally venture to assume as his son, though we cannot prove it.

In a book of masses for the dead we learn that on Sunday, June 4th, 1530, service was chanted in the chapel of St. John, for Melchioris de Forest, and that similar services followed in 1531 and later.*

Likewise in 1530 (month and day unrecorded) bans of marriage were published between Marguerite de Forest of Avesnes and Jean L'Eveque of Marbais.

These two de Forests, concerning whom there is not another discoverable word, were presumably the father and sister of the Melchior who follows.

* See archives of Avesnes, Appendix, paragraph 2.

CHAPTER II.

MELCHIOR DE FOREST, 2ND.

We come now to the father of the first protestant of the family and the grandfather of the first emigrant to America.

On Sunday the fourth of April 1533, there was publication of bans of marriage between Melchior de Forest of Avesnes and Catherine Du Fosset of Mons.

This record is completed and confirmed by a Du Fosset pedigree which appears on page 501 of the 4th volume of the *Genealogies of M. de Sars*, entered as number 604 of the manuscripts of the library of Valenciennes. According to this authority the parents of the bride were Antoine Du Fosset and Isabeau Res-teau; and the Du Fosset arms were *Sable, a paschal lamb argent holding a cross to which is attached a small pennon of two points charged with a cross gules*.*

Le Carpentier, the ancient historian of the Cambresis, attributes this device to a family founded by "one Watier du Fosset who in 1303 was made Gavenier of Cambresis.† He had a son of his own name, seigneur of Vireux and Grand Sart, who married Agnes Houcquiere, daughter of Guillaume Houcquiere, knight, by Agnes de Prayélé. From this marriage sprang," etc., etc.

A more modest pedigree, held in private hands at Brussels, commences with Jean Du Fosset, coun-

* See Appendix, paragraph 12, for this pedigree.

† Gavenier; a collector of feudal and churchly rents.

sellor of the sovereign court of Hainaut, who died at Mons on the 1st of July, 1496, leaving a grandson Antoine, the husband of Isabeau Resteau.

The mother of Catherine Du Fosset was also of an armorial family; her father, Guillaume Resteau, bore *Sable, a rateau or in pale*. According to Henry Vincent's "Annals of Hainaut," there was a Henry Resteau, lord of Roeth in Hainaut, who died in 1465. Le Carpentier, citing as authority a venerable chronicler named De Ligne, deduces the race from the ancient and noble counts of Rethel in Champagne, which is a pedigree to bow and scrape to if one could believe in it. Early in the XVth century a Jean de Resteau, bearing the above described golden *rateau* impaled on sable, espoused Jeanne de Forest, daughter of Louis de Forest lord of Aniche, bearing three sable crescents on a field argent.* Here, it would seem, is a distant relationship by marriage between the Avesnes de Forests and their knightly neighbors the "de Forests in Cambresis," who may also have been their faraway connections by consanguineous descent.

Intimate and friendly relations appear to have been maintained between the Du Fossets and their Avesnes connections by marriage. Catherine, the wife of Melchior de Forest, named a daughter Franchoise after a sister, and three sons, Antoine, Jean and Jaspard, after her father and two brothers. †

All these children were baptized according to the Roman Catholic rite, for it was not till 1566 that Protestantism became dominant in any Walloon city,

* See Appendix, par. 56 and 58; *rateau* is generally held to be a rake, though some heraldists explain it as a toothed porticullis.

† Appendix, par. 12. Jaspard is Walloon for Gaspard.

and at Avesnes it was never publicly permitted. But the religious question of that century must have been a familiar one in the ears of Melchior de Forest and his household. Long before he became a man of middle age Huguenot preachers and tracts and Bibles abounded in Walloondom, stirring up the people in secret against the ancient church, its dogmas and its hierarchy.

In 1566, when he may have been about fifty-six years old, he doubtless heard of the Protestant risings at Le Cateau, only twenty miles away, and at Valenciennes not much above fifty. Was he gratified or shocked at learning that the adherents of the new religion were in control of those important cities, and that they had flung out of the churches the statues, relics and other symbols of the Roman faith? We have no means of answering this question. Avesnes itself, daunted perhaps by a Spanish garrison, remained quiescent and silent.

In the following year came the Catholic revanche. Count von Mansfield subdued Le Cateau, and did some beheading, more hanging, and abundant confiscation, quite as much to please himself as the bishop of Cambresis. Count de Noircarmes, grand bailli of Hainaut, an able and harsh soldier, reduced Valenciennes and rolled in blood there, slaughtering and pillaging until many of the bitterest Romanists were disgusted by his atrocities.

Then, during 1568, occurred the first rising of William of Orange against the tyranny of Alva, and his march at the head of a German army into the Walloon regions. In November he was fighting within twenty or thirty miles of Avesnes, winning a

considerable skirmish at Quesnoy and another near Le Cateau. But vain was his struggle with newly levied and wretchedly provided troops against Alva's veteran regulars; and after losing eight thousand men in paltry encounters, he retreated into France with twenty thousand starving fugitives.

What must have been the ravage which these wild, famished hordes produced in Hainaut! But the dry and incomplete records of Avesnes give us no information concerning it; and indeed they furnish us with small knowledge upon any subject.

It must have been not far from 1570, say two years after the rout of Orange, that Jean de Forest, the presumed youngest son of Melchior, married Anne Maillard, daughter of Michel Maillard, a person of considerable note in the neighboring town of Felleries. But this date is purely a matter of estimate, for the church registers of Avesnes do not go back so far. It should be carefully noted here that this Jean was the first protestant of the family, and the father of the emigrant to America. Was he a reader of the Bible in the early days of his married life? One is inclined to divine it from the fact that he baptized a son by the Old Testament name of Jesse.

What can we positively learn as to the life of Melchior de Forest during this opening period of the great religious struggle in the Netherlands? In 1563 and again in 1564 he was Alderman of Avesnes; then there is a gap in the records, at least so far as he is concerned. In 1569, while residing at Guersignies, he purchased from Collart Grart a land-rental, which was in those days a common investment of spare capital. In 1571, March 17th, recording himself as

"a merchant dwelling in Avesnes," and his wife as Catheline du Fosset, he bought a land-rental from Gille de le Plancq.*

He must have died this year, thirty-eight years after his marriage, and probably not much above the age of sixty. On the 28th January, 1572, Catherine Du Fosset, describing herself as the widow of Melchior de Forest, assigned an annuity of eighty livres to his and her children, Balthazar, Anthoine, Jean, Jacqueline and Franchoise.† Another son, Jaspard, obtained no share in this division, doubtless because he had an income as canon of the chapter of St. Nicholas at Avesnes.

Some years later, on the 17th August, 1577, Catherine appears in record as purchasing property from her son Balthazar de Forest, merchant at Avesnes. Meantime the war of religions had raged around her and not far from her. Mons, only twenty-four miles away, was surprised in May, 1572, by Prince Louis of Orange, to the great astonishment and dismay of Spaniards and all Catholics. A long struggle ensued for the recovery of this important fortress-city. Alva besieged it with a powerful army, while Orange strove to relieve it with a host of Germans. The country for many miles around was ravaged by thousands of stragglers, as hungry and greedy and ferocious as the buccaneers of Morgan and Olonnais. We may note as a sign of the woeful times that in this year François Le Louchier, eldest son of Jeanne, the last heiress of the "de Forests in Cambresis," sold out the

* Appendix, par. 2. Catheline is nearly the Irish form, Kathleen. In legal and churchly papers of that time the wife is generally recorded by her full maiden name.

† Appendix, par. 2.

ancient manor of Forest which had been held for nearly two centuries by his mother's ancestors.* No doubt it had already been well sacked in 1568, when Orange was warring with Alva around Le Cateau.

In September, 1572, the widow of Melchior de Forest heard that Mons had been starved into a surrender, and that Orange's disorderly Germans had been driven in miserable rout from the Netherlands. She was but a little over sixty when, in 1576, her own Walloon people, supported by nearly all the nobles of Hainaut and Artois, rose against the Spaniards and formed the union of Ghent. But their patriotism was not proof against the influence of the Catholic clergy and the political arts of Philip's able leaders. In vain did Valenciennes, Quesnoy and Avesnes protest against the terms of pacification which were proffered by Don John of Austria. On the 6th January, 1579, the Walloon grandees, indifferent to the outcries of the cities of Hainaut, formed a new confederacy apart from the northern provinces, and pledged themselves to stand by crozier and crown.

Somewhat later in this year, "on the second Sunday after Trinity" says the record, there was mass for Catherine Du Fosset *in extremis*. † So passed the earliest fully authenticated generation of the ancestry of Jesse de Forest.

* Appendix, par. 60.

† Appendix, par. 2.

THE CHILDREN OF MELCHIOR DE FOREST, 2ND.

For reasons which will appear later the Jean de Forest mentioned in the gift of an annuity by Catherine Du Fosset to her children has been identified as the father of the emigrant to America in 1623. But before taking up his important history I will give some account of his brothers and other relatives, with a view to showing the social position of the family.

It seems certain enough that canon Jaspard de Forest was a brother of Jean, and that canon Gilles de Forest was either a brother or a cousin. In 1558 and 1559 we find them registered as canons of the chapter of St. Nicolas at Avesnes, which entitled them to an annual salary of sixty-eight *livres*, equivalent to perhaps seventy dollars at the present day.* Also, no doubt, there was lodging for them in the chapter-house, nourishment at the common table there, and some modest share of fees for masses and indulgences.

The chapter consisted of twelve canons, including provost and dean. It was attached to the cathedral, for St. Nicolas' town of Avesnes, though of moderate size, was the seat of a bishop, as a peerage city should be. On the 10th April, 1534, about a year after the marriage of Melchior de Forest, the chapter was founded by the very noble dame Louise d'Albret, widow of Charles de Croy, first prince of Chimay, and feudal Lady of Avesnes in right of her father Alain "the great," lord of Albret, count of Gaure, of Dreux, of Blois, and claimant of the duchy of Bre-

* Letter from M. Albert Gravet, of Avesnes.

tagne. Naturally the canons were nominated by the suzerain lord of Avesnes; but the provost was elected by the members of the chapter, and the dean reached his dignity by seniority.*

It was not one of the eleven noble chapters of France, but open to both gentlemen and commoners; nevertheless, the canons received the title of *messire* and were held socially as equal to knights. The church of Christ was *aristo* in Catholic countries during "the ages of faith." The canons of Lyons seriously and stubbornly claimed the title of counts. Kings and puissant barons willingly accepted election to distinguished chapters. All the canonries of Germany were noble, says Voltaire; no common-born man, however pious, could enter one of them. The Supreme Being might feel comfortably certain that every prayer which reached Him from the cathedrals of Deutschland had been sent upwards by a *herr* who could show at least four quarterings of heraldry, and probably sixteen, and perhaps thirty-two. What an honor and gratification to the Supreme Being!

The records concerning our relatives in the chapter of St. Nicholas are scanty. We know of Gilles that he was elected provost and survived to be dean. † Then comes, under date of 1579, "third Sunday Septuages, mass solempnelle, from the church, for the soul of Messire Jaspard de Forest." And again later, till the work was done, let us hope lastingly. ‡

Antoine de Forest, probably one of the two elder sons of Melchior and Catherine, is the only one of

* Dictionnaire des Gaules, by Expilly, t. 1, p. 333, annee 1742.

† Letter of M. Albert Gravet.

‡ Archives of Avesnes; see Appendix, par. 4.

the family who appears in the Belgian State Archives at Mons.* Specified and identified as a resident of Avesnes, he figures in a "Register of fief-holders *sur plumes*" dressed by Monseigneur de Noircarmes grand bailli of Hainaut from 1566 to 1571. †

Passing over the fact that this Noircarmes is the butcher of Valenciennes and Mons, let us enquire what was a "fief-holder *sur plumes*."

According to the *Glossaire Français* of Lacurne de Sainte Palaye, he was a fief-holder who was obligated to pay rent in feathered creatures, meaning poultry. ‡ But according to M. Albert Gravet of Avesnes the phrase *sur plumes* had quite another meaning, and a special meaning, in Hainaut. I translate from his letter on the subject :

* Extracts of said Archives furnished by the conservator M. Leopold Devillers.

† "Registre des hommes de fief créés sur plumes" is the French phrase.

‡ "Rentes en plumes," i. e. rentes en volailles. . . "Rentes de grains, en plumes, ou autres semblables." . . "Pour fonds de terres arrentez à redevance de plume, ou avoine, les rentes ne sont rachatables." (Coutume de Hainaut, au Nouveau Coutumier General, I, 123.)

"Plume et relief de plume" se dit quand l'heritage ne doit que plume,—a saviour pouelle, geline, jau ou chappon de rente. (Lauriere.)

"Les huit autres, soient ecclesiastiques, nobles ou du tiers estat, devront estre feodaux en fond, ou bien sur plume. (Coutume de Hainaut, au Nouveau Coutumier General, I, 43.)

See Lacurne de Ste Palaye (*Glossaire*, t. VII, p. 345). "You will observe that the possession of a *fief sur plumes* did not exclude the idea of nobility, or at least of privilege."

Leon Pajot (archivist paleographe).

I must admit that between these two explanations of the phrase *fief sur plume* I am unable to decide.

“The charter granted to the country of Hainaut by Duke William of Bavaria, on the 7th July, 1410, ordered that fief-holders ‘should be able to read the letters which they had occasion to seal,’ (*exigea que les hommes de fief sachent lire les lettres qu’ils vorant sieller.*)

“It eventually resulted that government granted the dignity of fief-holder to educated men, who on paying a moderate sum (for instance, 14 francs in the last century) were created by the grand bailli, or the president of the Council of Hainaut, ‘fief-holders of the said county *sur plumes.*’ These fief-holders took oath before the clerk of the Feudal Court of Hainaut, and their names were inscribed on registers still existing at Mons and at Lille.”

Hence it appears that Antoine de Forest may have been member of a minor magistracy, originally intended to perform the duties of local seigneurs who could not read, much less write, their names. He was perhaps the equivalent of an English justice of the peace who is not the lord of a manor. Whether he possessed a modicum of land, and whether his position were anything more than merely honorary, we cannot say. But it is a pleasure to trust that he had money to spare, and that he could “read the letters which he had occasion to seal.”

In 1571, as we learn from a record at Avesnes, he was alderman in conjunction with his brother Baltazar. There is no mention of him later than January, 1572, when he received a portion of a rental from his mother.

Baltazar de Forest, probably the eldest son of Melchior, was elected alderman in 1571, in 1574 and 1578.

Indeed, he and his relatives may have had many terms of office, for the city archives are by no means continuous and complete.

In 1570 (Dec. 1) he appears as the son-in-law of Estienne Marin, making over a small property to his wife's brother, Louis Marin, who was to marry one Franchoise Huberlant.

In the following year (June 8) the above Estienne Marin, "provost of the peerage city of Avesnes," conveys to Adrienne Marin, "spouse of Baltazart de Forest residing in Avesnes," a fief under the jurisdiction of said city comprising three *razières* of land.*

In 1577 (May 15) "Balthazar de Forest in right of Adrienne Marin his wife, Jean L'Eveque in right of Martenne Marin his wife, Martin Canriot in right of Charlotte Marin his wife, and Guillemette Marin widow of Loys du Joncquois residing at Fourmies, make showing that by the decease of Etienne Marin their father and father-in-law, there have fallen to them certain portions, heritages and rents lying within the jurisdiction of Avesnes, whcreof they have made partition."

Farther along in the same year Balthazar appears twice as buying and selling property, once recorded as merchant and once as draper. In 1582, December 18, he is entered as a "burgher dwelling at Avesnes," hiring of the city a heritage in land which pertained in some fashion to his relative Philip de Forest, presumably a forbear of the Quartdeville lineage.

The above briefs show that Balthazar belonged to the guild of wool-merchants and to that upper class

* A suburban lot probably. A *razière* was less than half an acre. For records concerning Balthazar see Appendix, par. 3.

of citizens which could hold the highest municipal offices. The honorable status of the burgherhood has been treated of in the previous chapter ; but the wool-merchants also constituted a kind of industrial patricianate, and deserve some special notice.

It is well known to writers on heraldry that a few centuries ago the trade in woolen cloth and the manufacture of it were regarded as most respectable industries, not degrading to sons of knights and landed gentry. In the Florence of Dante's time the noblest of all guilds was the one which dealt in foreign cloths, and next to it stood that which dealt in the native article. England and the Netherlands, both French and Teutonic, held the woolen business in similar repute. Indeed, several others of the higher guilds (those belonging to employers) were considered honorable, as for instance the grocers in wholesale, the silk-merciers, the jewelers. The emigrant founders of the Byrds and Peytons of Virginia, knightly races as I understand, were registered at London, one with the jewelers, the other with the merchant tailors. The Saltonstalls, one of the knightly families of early New England, were merchants of burgher stock.

Thus it is worth noting that, aside from the two canons Jaspard and Gilles, all the de Forests of Avesnes whose profession is recorded were in the wool trade, namely, Melchior, Baltazar, Simon, Philip, Giles 3rd, Jean and Jesse. It was not till some years after the last named had left his native place that he became a dyer.*

* His brother Gerard appears at Leyden both as dyer and merchant.

Let us return to Jesse's uncle, alderman Baltasar de Forest. In 1594 (Aug. 4), still a "merchant resident at Avesnes," he sold to his wife's sister, "demoiselle Charlotte Marin widow of the late Martin Canriot," a rental of seventy sols tournois, based upon "eight *razières* of garden and pasture situated on the old road to Cartignies," and therefore outside the walls.

How much was signified by the word *demoiselle*? At this period it did not mean *young lady*, but something nearly equivalent to *gentlewoman* in the usage of two hundred years ago. It meant *minor lady*, distinctly below *dame*, much below *noble dame*, greatly below *haute et noble dame*. Charlotte Marin may have had the modest title granted to her because of some distinction acquired by her husband.

But titles change with times. In the earlier centuries, when the feudal noblesse was everything, the word *demoiselle* belonged to the daughters of the baronage and to wives of damoiseaus, seigneurs and esquires.* At a later date, say during the sixteenth century, the wealthy burgher seized it for his wife. The baronage, especially that of venerable descent, was angrily jealous of such encroachments. In 1560 the ancient noble families of Orleans petitioned the parliament of that province to suppress the unbecoming impertinences of the lately ennobled families, such as wearing gilt-edged hats and velvet-hilted swords, dressing their women in robes of velvet with gilt borderings, and styling them *demoiselles*. Such pomp, contended the old time magnates, should not be conceded to a race until it had been noble for four generations. †

* Larousse : Dictionnaire Universelle.

† Ibid.

We learn naught of Baltazar de Forest after 1594. If he lived to the great peace of 1598 between France and Spain (when his brother Jean left Avesnes to settle at Sedan and profess the Protestant faith) he would not have been above sixty-four years of age. His son Martin appears in record in 1617, his grandson Jean in 1635, and others of the line fifty years later.*

There was a Melchior de Forest, third of the name in Avesnes, who may perhaps have been a brother of Baltazar. Nothing is recorded of him except a solemn mass for him and his wife Marie La Sur in 1582, dominica 2^o quadragesima. †

The remaining early de Forests of the city are presumed to be of that branch which produced the Nicolas who in 1690 or thereabout removed to Tournay and founded the honorable house known as the de Forests of Quartdeville.

ANCESTORS OF THE QUARTDEVILLE LINEAGE.

It is well to remind the reader that the exact relationship between this lineage and that of Melchior 2d cannot be settled until more records of Avesnes are discovered.

Little attention need be granted to Simon de Forest, merchant-draper and husband of Agnes Le Pont, who purchased various land rentals between 1565 and 1586, dying previous to December 16th, 1598, and leaving a son Simon extant in 1606. †

* App., par. 5.

† App., par. 5. La Sur sometimes appears as La Sueur.

‡ Appendix, par. 6.

Of much more importance is Philippe de Forest, merchant in cloth also, and husband of *demoiselle* Franchoise Petit, who in November, 1567, begins a long series of investments in lands and rentals, eventually becoming owner of nearly the whole of a fine tract called the Green Valley. One of his transactions was the hiring of a wood lot from "Monseigneur" the duke of Arschot. It is possible that his wife belonged to a notable family of Petits, residents of Mons, who bore the title of "seigneurs of Forest," and doubtless held a fief of that name in Hainaut. Philippe is repeatedly recorded as jurat, a term applied to a citizen of the office-holding class who could keep a horse, and who held himself bound to support the sheriff by arms in case of riot or other resistance to the law. In 1625, then a man of near ninety, he dwelt by the Little Market, "living on his means, with one serving woman," and paying seven livres personal taxes.*

In 1582 marriage was announced between Philip's son Giles de Forest and Catherine du Trieu of Binche, the first ban being proclaimed *dominica 30 post oct. pass.*, and the third *in die ascensionis*. Binche was a considerable town, now containing about 7,000 inhabitants, situated in Belgian Hainaut, ten miles southeast of Mons. †

Of course it is possible that the bride was of the same stock with that Philip du Trieu who came to New York bay in 1624, and whose daughter Sarah married Isaac de Forest in 1641. But this relationship, however attractive to the imagination, cannot be proven. The protestant du Trieus who sought

* Appendix, par. 7.

† Appendix, par. 8.

refuge from Spanish tyranny in Holland made no discovered registration of their original place of residence in the Walloon regions.*

Catherine du Trieu is entitled *demoiselle* in the Avesnes records, while her husband Giles de Forest appears as jurat and as merchant-burgher. In 1625 he dwelt in the rue de Normeries (now Victor Hugo), "living on his means," with a daughter and one serving woman, and paying eight *livres* personal taxes. †

In this same year Nicolas de Forest, draper, perhaps a brother of the above Giles, dwelt at the Little Market, hard by old Philip, and paid a tax of six *livres* per annum. ‡

But the genesis of the Quartdeville line is now somewhat difficult to clear up. There was a Philip 2nd and a Philip 3rd; also a Giles 3rd and a Giles 4th; also a Nicolas 2nd and 3rd. These persons appear many times in certain records of Avesnes (cartons et registres O, 535, 536, 539), comprised among the Documents of the Orleans family in the *Bibliothèque Nationale* at Paris §. It is not worth while to introduce into this volume the complicated proofs of a lineage which is only related collaterally to the de Forests of America. We may note, however, that down to 1709, the latest date given in the above mentioned papers, the family remained in good financial estate and prominent in the municipal affairs of Avesnes.

* De Trieux records in App., par. 20.

† App., par. 8.

‡ App., par. 9.

§ See App., par. 54.

CHAPTER III.

JEAN DE FOREST.

From the Quartdeville branch we turn back to the first Protestant among the Avesnes de Forests and the father of their emigrant to America.

It will be remembered that the widow of Melchior de Forest, in a donation to her children dated the 28th January, 1572, mentioned one of them by the name of Jean. This is the only Jean de Forest discoverable in the records of Avesnes until we reach the Jean of 1635, grandson of Baltazar. There is no possibility of a confusion of identity between the two persons.

It may fairly be assumed that the Jean of 1572 was the youngest son, if not also the youngest child, of Melchior de Forest and Catherine Du Fosset. After the fashion of junior sons in those times, and indeed down to quite modern times, he received fewer parental favors than his elder brothers. He was not betrothed into a family of gentlefolks, like Baltazar. He did not get to be alderman, nor fief-holder *sur plumes*, like Antoine. He was not educated for the church and made "my lord canon," like Jaspard. A wife was selected for him (doubtless by his mother, *more gallico*) from the substantial but hardly aristocratic family of Maillards, residing in the neighboring unwall'd town of Felleries, where Michel Maillard became mayor in 1572.*

* Maillard records ; App., par. 11.

Of course there have been heraldic breeds of this name, and one of them is thus mentioned by Jean Le Carpentier, historian of the Cambresis.

"Maillard. Arms: de gules à trois pans de vair au premier quartier d'or. This house was made notable in Cambresis as early as 1103 by Hilduin de Maillard, seigneur of Trescaut and La Teriere. In 1175 another Hilduin gave to the abbey of Mont St. Martin twelve *mencaudees* of land adjoining the Maillard Wood, not far from Villers-Outreau. I find in 1239 a Watier de Maillard, knight, benefactor of the abbeys of St. Aubert, Honnecourt and Premy. A Simon Maillard, esquire, was freeholder of the bishop of Cambrai in 1275; a Guillaume Maillard was governor of Creve-cœur in 1296."

There is not the slightest proof as to whether these ancient and honorable Maillards were, or were not, progenitors of the mayor of Felleries. They are introduced here mainly with a view to declaring once more that identity of name is not evidence of identity of blood.

Also, the reader should be informed that Jean de Forest of Avesnes is not the same with one Jean de Forest who took part in the Protestant rising of Le Cateau already mentioned. This last, a person quite unaccounted for, had a daughter bearing the unaccountable name of Jeroniette de Buisnicourt, who was old enough to be married in December, 1666, so that her father must have been born not much later than 1620. Meantime the most probable birth-date for our Jean, son of Melchior and Catherine, is not earlier than 1640, or say 1643.

The year of his marriage with Anne Maillard is also undiscoverable, for the book of proclamations of bans fails for that period, and we are reduced to estimate that it took place about 1570.

From the fact that he appears so little in the records of Avesnes it may reasonably be suspected that he resided there irregularly, and that he was often an outlying agent for the family, seeking markets for its cloths in other provinces or even in foreign lands. It is possible that traces of him may yet be found in some French border town or some Flemish seaport.

Yet it appears from the written declarations of two of his children that they were born in the peerage city which Werric founded and where d'Albrets and de Croys had been seigneurs. Gerard, while living in Leyden, twice recorded himself as "a native of Avesnes in the country of Hainaut"; and Anne, in her act of betrothal at Amsterdam, gave herself the same birthplace, and her birth-year as 1587.* These statements are extremely important as proving the geographical origin of our ancestors and indicating that they had some reason to be proud of it.

If Jean de Forest were born about the year 1543, Spain's great military struggle with Protestantism commenced in his early manhood; and thenceforward she had for many years waged furious war, incessantly with Holland, long with England, finally with France. Even Luxemburg, a little Protestant principality to the east of Hainaut, was at times in conflict with his "most catholic majesty," as well as with her Papistical neighbor Lorraine. It must have been difficult for the Walloons to secure a sufficient market

* App., par. 16.

for their great staple, woolen cloth. Something could be sent to Spain by sea, and there was intermittent trading with France, and no doubt smuggling to England. But on the whole, times had been fearfully hard in the Spanish Netherlands, not only with the peasants and the artisans, but with the wealthier class of burghers. Hence Jean de Forest might be often abroad as agent for the de Forest wool-firm while leaving his family in Avesnes.

When and under what circumstances did he become a Protestant? He may have been one in Hainaut secretly, like tens of thousands of other Walloons who were constantly stealing away to Holland, crowding her workshops and filling up her infantry. To have professed heresy openly, under Philip Second and the Holy Inquisition, would have insured prompt martyrdom of some sort.

Apparently he was not a declared Protestant in 1587, for in that year his daughter Anne was born at Avesnes, and he was presumably there.* Eleven years afterwards the war between France and Spain ended with the treaty of 1598, a date notable also in American colonial history, for in that year representatives of the Dutch "Greenland Company" wintered in New York Bay, where a son of Jean de Forest was to aid, more or less directly, in establishing a famous colony a quarter of a century later.

Peace found the Roman Catholic Netherlands in a frightful state of misery. During the war, and the decades of persecution which preceded it, 500,000 Walloons had emigrated to foreign countries, mostly to Holland, carrying with them their fighting quali-

* Appendix, par. 16.

ties, their industry, their cunning in manufactures, in short a whole prosperous civilization. At least 100,000 more had fallen in battle, or by massacre, or on the scaffold. That any Walloons were left alive in their own country seems remarkable, and proves how difficult it is to trample out the human plant. The cities showed in their silent and deserted streets what the region had suffered from religious intolerance, from the stupidity and tyranny of Spanish misrule, and from the African ferocity of the Spanish soldiery. The country parts were similarly depopulated; the highways overgrown by brambles and haunted by bands of starving robbers; the ragged and famished peasants secreting themselves at the approach of strangers; the horrors of cannibalism near at hand, if not actually present.

It was a country to emigrate from, if a man proposed to support his children comfortably, or to give them a hopeful start in life. Three years after the peace, in the month of September 1601, we find Jean de Forest established as a merchant at Sedan, and obviously a professed Protestant already. It is impossible to state the circumstances under which he turned his back upon his birthplace and his old religion. His children at this period were strangely dispersed. Jesse was with him; but Anne was at Amsterdam; Gerard was probably at Leyden; Melchior was at Lille.* Had there been political or clerical hostility, resulting in hasty and confused flight? We can only reply that it was a time of persecution and suffering, swarming with refugees from violence as well as with voluntary exiles.

* App., par. 16.

The civic records of Sedan do not mention Jean de Forest, which leads one to suspect that he had but a brief residence there. The church registers mention him for the first and only time in 1601, as "a merchant of this city" marrying his son Jesse to the daughter of another merchant. A translated copy of this registration will appear in our next chapter.

But Luxemburg had suffered as severely from the religious wars as Flanders. Business there was probably far from brisk, and Jean de Forest soon left his wool merchandising in Sedan to Jesse, setting his own face toward free, busy, prosperous Holland, the Zion of refuge for countless exiled Huguenots.

At that time the United Netherlands, bustling with manufactures and trade, glorious with the plunder of Spain's tribute from the two Indies, was the richest country of earth. Cardinal Bentivoglio, Papal legate to the romanist low-countries, and an able contemporaneous historian of the Dutch struggle for independence, visited Holland during and after the negotiations of 1610, and described in the fervid language of amazement her dense population, her jostling swarms of artisans, her crowded exchanges and loaded wharves, her great fleet of sea-going merchantmen, her canals which bore an equal commerce of their own, her disciplined and well-furnished army.* In its enthusiasm and eloquence this description reminds one of Ezekiel's splendid eulogium of the glory of Tyre. Yet it is the praise of an enemy, driven no doubt to wonder and admire regretfully; although in justice it must be admitted that Bentivoglio was mentally far removed from stupid and prejudiced

* See his Legation Reports to the Pope.

intolerance ; indeed, his writings often exhibit the "immoral impartiality" of the great early historians of Italy.

Berghen-op-Zoom seems to have been the first tarrying place of Jean de Forest in Holland. But he presently pushed onward, and made visits of inspection to several other Dutch cities, before he decided upon a permanent place of settlement. In March, 1603, he communed with the church of Leyden by letter from the church of Berghen-op-Zoom. In November 1604 he communed with the church of Amsterdam by letter from the church of Leyden.* We can track him from communion-table to communion-table. His religion was clear and established now, to himself and to all who knew him, however uncertain at Avesnes.

At Amsterdam he found his wife, who had preceded him thither by a year, anxious no doubt to rejoin her youthful daughter Anne, from whom she had been separated by unexplained circumstances ever since 1601. But he had apparently left a business chance behind him, for ere long he returned southward and settled at Vosmeer, a village in the neighborhood of Berghen-op-Zoom. †

In 1606, October 1st, "Anne des Forests of Avesnes, aged nineteen years, for five years at Amsterdam," was betrothed in the presence of her mother, Anne Maillard, to Jean Le Fevre, *caffatier*, resident of the Weaveries at Leyden, who was probably a French

* Registers of Walloon churches ; Appendix, par. 16.

† Idem.

Huguenot, though he had passed his childhood at Amsterdam.*

Here we are attracted by a puzzling question. What was a *caffatier*? In modern French *caffatier* means the keeper of a coffee-house, just as *garçon de café* means a waiter therein. But the *café*, that is the coffee-house, was first known at Venice in 1640, at Marseilles in 1654, at London in 1672.† Is it possible that Jean Le Fevre introduced it into Holland as early as 1606, thirty-four years earlier than it is on record at Venice? We are driven to conclude that in his time and at Amsterdam *caffatier* meant coffee-merchant.

Anne de Forest was instructed to procure a written consent to the betrothal from her father. The required document came to hand with the signature of Gerardus Schepenius, minister at Vosmeer.‡ Was Jean de Forest dead, or too ill to write? There is not another discoverable word concerning him.

His daughter, recorded this time as Anne "du Forest," married Jean "Le Febure" on the 24th of January, 1607. Her brother Gerard, when he made a will (not his last) in 1633, left two hundred florins to his mother Anne Maillard, but said nothing of his father.§

The mortuary records of the Walloon churches in Holland (which only go back to 1622) fail to mention

* Walloon Ch. registers ; App., par. 16.

† Larousse. Yet it is said in "Social England" (H. D. Traill), vol. iv, that the first coffee-house of London was opened in St. Michael's alley, Cornhill, by a Greek, during 1652.

‡ App., par. 16.

§ Civic records of Leyden ; App., par. 17.

Jean de Forest. It is probable that he died long before his wife, who was buried at Amsterdam, April 21st, 1640.* Nor is there much doubt that he died afar from his family and in no circumstances of wealth. What had he gained by his new religion? What reward had it brought him? Never mind! Better the reward hereafter! *Au ciel, mon Seigneur! Avec toi!*

* Walloon Ch. registers ; App., par. 17.

CHAPTER IV.

JESSE DE FOREST.

As Jesse de Forest was married in 1601, we may reasonably assume that he was born not far from 1575.

But, owing to the incompleteness of the early records of Avesnes, his name first appears in the registers of the old Huguenot church of Sedan, sequestrated in 1669 by his dragonading majesty Louis XIV, and now but lately rescued from notarial dust and oblivion. Unfortunately these resurrected archives lack many pages, and do not show when the de Forests arrived in Sedan, nor whence they came. The earliest entry which concerns them translates as follows :

" 1601: Sunday, 23d day of said month (September), at the Catechism, the said Sieur du Tilloy blessed the marriage of Jesse des forests, son of Jean des forests merchant residing in this city, with Marie du Cloux, daughter of Nicaise du Cloux merchant residing in this city." *

In the following year appears a record which shows that Jesse himself had become a merchant of Sedan.

" 1602: Sunday, 7th day of said month (July), on which day was celebrated the Lord's Supper, Monsieur du Tilloy, having made the evening exhortation, baptized Marie, daughter of Jesse des forests

* For the Sedan records see App., par. 13.

merchant residing in this city, and of Marie du Cloux his wife." Sponsors: Estienne du Cloux and Marie Aubertin.

Then follow the baptisms of four other children: Jean, July 22nd, 1604, witnessed by Jean le Vasseur and Magdeleine du Cloux; Henry, March 7th, 1606, witnessed by Henry de Lambremont, merchant, and his wife Rachel Aubertin; Elizabeth, November 1st, 1607, witnessed by Abraham le Groa, goldsmith, and his wife Elizabeth Aubertin; David, December 11th, 1608, witnessed by David de Lambremont, merchant dyer at Montcornet, and Marie de Lambremont, daughter of Henry.*

Several of these names connect the family with its later existence in America. Henry de Forest was one of the founders of Harlem, on the island of Manhattan, and died there in 1637. † Jean, sometimes recorded as Johannes, had a small claim against the estate of Henry, though it does not appear certain that he ever crossed the ocean. David visited New Amsterdam in 1659, and had a son baptized there, but in 1665 had returned to Holland, and was guardian to Willem and Rachel de la Montagne, grandchildren of his sister Rachel. ‡

From this voyage across the Atlantic we return to the registers of Sedan. The name of de Forest is spelled there, according to the varying lights and reminiscences of the clerk, des forests, des foretz, des forets and des forest. We must not be astonished at

* The name Lambremont is properly Lambertmont, which means Lamberthill. I know nothing of the origin of the family.

† App., par. 26.

‡ App., par. 17; date, 1665.

this sudden change from the form current at Avesnes. There will be many more changes as the exiled family wanders on from city to city, and is forced into record in dialect after dialect, language after language. Spelling was not based on established, world-wide principles in those days, as indeed it is not in the present. The word de Forest sounded differently to the ears of different villes and stadts and parishes. To get at the real name and its pronunciation we should note that the man who is registered at Sedan as Jesse des forests always subscribed himself as Jesse de Forest.

Up to 1606, inclusive, Jesse appears in the above mentioned records as a merchant (probably in woolen cloth) residing at Sedan. In 1607 he is still a merchant, but resident at Montcornet in Thierache, an eastern canton of Picardy. In 1608 he was there still, but had changed his style to merchant-dyer. It is clear that while living at Montcornet, he was in partnership with David de Lambremont, husband of Magdeleine du Cloux, a sister of Marie. It is also noteworthy that his children were always christened after a godfather or a godmother, a fact which accounts for the disappearance of the baptismal names current among the de Forests of Avesnes.

The du Cloux were people of consideration at Sedan. Several of them were merchants; others were barristers, notaries, surgeons. One Jean du Cloux was bailli of the city previous to 1596.*

After 1608 there is a lamentable gap of eight years in the church registers of Sedan; and we learn nothing more of Jesse de Forest until 1615, when he appears

* App., pars. 14 and 15.

in the Walloon registers of Leyden.* His daughter Rachel, mother of one of the notable families of New York, must have been born in 1609, while Hendrick Hudson was sounding his way up the "great north river," and four years earlier than Christænsen put up his block-house on Manhattan Island. At all events, she married Jean Mousnier la Montagne in 1626, and seventeen was fairly young for a bride, even in those days.

Meantime Jesse's elder brother, Melchior, and his younger brother, Gerard, had reached Holland.† As but little is known of the former, it is convenient to dismiss him first, although he arrived last. In 1611 Melchior "du Forest" joined the Walloon church at Amsterdam by letter from the church of Lille, a French city with a considerable Huguenot population. On the 1st of March, 1615, he visited Leyden to stand as godfather to "Jesse, son of Jesse du Forest and Marie du Cloux." On the 6th of April, 1616, he had a son Jean baptized at Amsterdam. His wife was Marie Gobert, whose family name is traceable in the ancient records of Avesnes.‡

Gerard de Forest appears often in the Walloon church registers and in the civic records of Holland. In his case the patronymic is diversified into du Forest, du Forret, des Forests, de Forre, de foree and Gerrit foré, according to the inventiveness of the various scribes. Perhaps one may venture to observe, in passing, that a family which cannot show many

* Something might be gleaned in the records of Montcornet.

† Probably elder and younger; birth-dates unknown.

‡ App., pars. 6 and 16.

different spellings of its name is probably not a very ancient family, at least in record.

On the 9th of April, 1605, Gerard "du Forest" joined the Walloon church of Leyden by profession of faith. In November of the same year he went to Amsterdam, partly perhaps to investigate prospects of business there, and partly to visit his mother, his sister Anne and his brother Melchior. In May, 1606, he had settled in Leyden, and bought land of the burgomasters there for a dyery, paying by annual instalments of fifty and seventy-five florins, which was then more money than it now seems, but nevertheless indicated a slender purse.

On the 12th August, 1611, "Gerard des Forests, dyer, native of Avesnes in the country of Hainaut," married Hester de la Grange, daughter of Crispin de la Grange, dyer, native of France.* On the 6th October, 1617, he purchased the right of citizenship in Leyden, again registering himself as a native of Avesnes in Hainaut, as though the fact were a claim to respect. Later records show that he prospered as a dyer and as a merchant; that he had six children, one of whom (according to Riker) married Johannes Panhuysen, a director of the Dutch West India Company; that he lived to be guardian of two grandchildren of his niece Rachel (de Forest) La Montagne; and that he died in August, 1654, leaving the respectable estate of 15,325 florins. †

We return now to Jesse, and his first appearance in Holland, where his name is tormented by the record-

* There are La Granges of this stock in the United States.

† For the above facts see App., pars. 16 and 17; also par. 72, for Marie van Forest.

ists into du Forest, du Forrest, des Forests, des forest and de Forré. His children born at Leyden were: Jesse, baptized March 1st, 1615, with uncle Melchior for sponsor; Isaac (the future ancestor of the American de Forests), July 10th, 1616; Israel, October 7th, 1617; Philippe, September 13th, 1620.* Adding Rachel and those registered at Sedan, we have ten, besides a supposable few belonging in the recordless blank between 1609 and 1615. Possibly it was this host of young mouths to feed which first suggested to Jesse de Forest his scheme of transatlantic emigration.

It appears probable that he was at times pressed for money. A Hague civic record of 1618 exhibits him as pledging his dyery-chaldron and other chattels to secure a debt of fifty florins on his house rent. But there were more pathetic cases than this among the exiled Huguenots in Holland; there were scions of noble Walloon houses begging food in the streets of Leyden and Amsterdam.

Moreover, if Jesse de Forest had not been stimulated by poverty, he might not have gathered his transatlantic colony. The audacious adventurers of history have seldom been rich, but rather the contrary. Usselinx the founder of the West India Company, and Peter Minuit the founder of New Sweden, were both men of ruined fortunes. John Smith and William Bradford knew what it was to sit at the door of starvation. Columbus discovered America, and Fulton built his steamboat, on borrowed money. Peter the Hermit and Walter the Penniless headed crusades. Julius Cæsar conquered Gaul because he was five millions in debt.

* App., par. 16.

The most telling trait of practical genius is a faculty for putting the wealth and labor of others into the prosecution of one's own designs. Perhaps there is no more sublime spectacle in history than that of a man who knows not where to lay his head stepping forward to guide and save his fellow creatures, with a perfect confidence that he can do it. The thought of our exiled ancestor, with his ten young children and his haunting debt of fifty florins, planning and petitioning and recruiting for a Protestant colony in America, is a remembrance which ought to fill his descendants with pride, and to stimulate them to courage of soul and energy of deed.

In July, 1620, Jesse de Forest must have been aware of the departure of the Pilgrim fathers from Holland for America. Was he personally acquainted with the members of this memorable band? There is no likelihood that he could speak English or Dutch, or that they could speak French. But he must have known of their presence in Leyden, of the circumstances which had led them to settle there, and of their purpose in migrating to the new world. Why should not Walloons also settle in a land where they could maintain the Protestant faith and the usage of their native tongue? We may confidently assume that he asked himself this question.

What was the colonizing situation at this time in Holland? Eleven years earlier a Dutch bark, commanded by an English captain, had explored the Hudson river and claimed for the republic a vast contiguous region. Since then Christænsen had built a log fort on Manhattan Island, and had traded for furs with the savage natives. But there was no per-

manent settlement, because Holland could not raise colonists. Meanwhile England surlily claimed the country, and France was indolently preparing to seize it.

At the critical moment, when a French vessel had already entered the Hudson to take possession, help came to Holland in the form of a colony of Walloons. But why Walloons, instead of some other race of refugees, or a band of Frieslanders or Zealanders? Here is a question which most historians of New York have but partly answered. It was because of *one* Walloon; a man with a fixed idea; a man with an obsession. Jesse de Forest had conceived the design of planting a colony of his own people in the new world; and this design he carried, Columbus-like, from year to year and from state to state until he had brought it to execution.

There was plenty of convenient human material for the purpose. Since 1610 peace had generally prevailed in Christendom, and many thousands of soldiers had been dismissed to civil life, great numbers of them countrymen of de Forest. For instance, as we learn from the letters of Henry IV, the 8,000 infantry which the States General had sent to aid him in the siege of Rouen, were all Walloons. Then there were the countless artisans and peasants from the Spanish Netherlands who had swarmed to Holland in search of employment and food. De Forest had no need to return to his own country in search of colonists.

The Dutch needed his adventurers. They were anxious, not only to find work for their hosts of aliens, but also to contest the possession of the East

and West Indies with Spain and England. Previous to 1620 the Netherland Company had sought "by large offers" to engage the Pilgrim Fathers to populate its American possessions. The riskiness of this project shows how sorely Holland needed the Walloons.

Meantime there was no colonial machinery ready to employ them. The Greenland Company and the New Netherland Company had successively died out. In June, 1620, the States General commenced debate upon the project of a West India Company, but with such deliberation that three years elapsed before the charter was issued. Either these lingering counsels discouraged de Forest, or he was bent on following the Puritans, for in the latter half of July, 1621, he sought the residence of the British ambassador at the Hague, and announced himself as spokesman for three hundred of his fellow Huguenots.

"There hath been with me of late," wrote Sir Dudley Carleton (July 19) to state secretary Calvert, "a certaine Walon, in the name of divers families, men of all trades and occupations, who desire to goe unto Virginia. . . . I required of him his demands in writing, with the signatures of such as were to bear part therein, both of which I send your honor herewith." *

The "demands" were presented under date of July 21st, 1621. They were signed by Jesse de Forest alone; it is observable also that he alone called upon

* See History of the Huguenot Emigration to America, by C. M. Baird, vol. I, pp. 158-163, with notes; also pp. 348-351 for the full document, in French. Baird gives a loose translation, from the Docs. Rel. to the Col. Hist. of N. Y. I have corrected the blunders of this version, in my Appendix, par. 21.

the ambassador; there can be no doubt of his presence and of his leadership. So it is throughout the whole of this business of getting a Walloon colony to America. He signed the first known document on the subject, and the last one was addressed to him. He was the beginning and the end of the entire enterprise.

The "demands" show precisely the devout spirit of the Pilgrim Fathers of New England. Fifty or sixty Walloon and French families, "all of the reformed faith," prayed the king of England to grant them a settlement in Virginia, and "to maintain them in their religion" by undertaking their protection and defense. A thousand volumes and orations have glorified the Plymouth Puritans for living and dying in accordance with similar sentiments and desires. But concerning the pious Walloons of early New York the world has remained ignorant, unsympathetic and dumb.

The "demands" advanced various practical suggestions as to the management of the colony. Whereas one ship could not carry three hundred persons with their cattle, would not his majesty furnish them with another properly armed and equipped? It was desirable, also, to arrange for regular commerce between England and the colony. The settlers would build and fortify a town, but would need cannon and munitions to defend it. They desired a reservation of sixteen English miles in diameter for their own separate inhabitation, doubtless purposing and trusting that in such an asylum they might preserve their Calvinistic worship and their native tongue. This territory they would hold in fealty from his majesty

under his laws ; while reserving to themselves, in all local matters, "rights of inferior lordship" ; and also requesting "that those of them who could live as nobles might be permitted to style themselves such."

There was nothing strange at that time in this final condition. The spirit of the age was oligarchical, even in nominal republics, even in Holland. The majority of men firmly held that civilized society could not exist unless there were nobles to enlighten and direct it; and nowhere did this venerable credence prevail more vigorously than in the native province of Jesse de Forest and many of his companions. Froissart, a son of Valenciennes in Hainaut, expresses precisely the belief of his countrymen when he celebrates the excellence of "good knights" as compared with the baseness of plebeian humanity. Finally, de Forest probably knew that the colonizing plans of the Virginia Company included the combination of a ruling gentry with an indentured peasantry. If there must be nobles in the proposed Huguenot settlement, he preferred that the Walloons and French should provide their own.

In accordance with Carleton's suggestion the "demands" were accompanied by a round-robin promising good faith in the enterprise, signed by fifty-six men, mostly heads of families, each of whom added the number of his household, the total of persons being two hundred and twenty-seven.* De Forest himself proposed to take over his wife and five children, leaving the others, we may suppose, under the care of his brothers and sister, or mother.

* See printed and photographic copies in Baird, vol. I, pp. 162 and 167.

Carleton forwarded the papers with a friendly indorsement, though he considered some of the conditions "extravagant." Calvert referred them to the directors of the Virginia Company, who made reply on the 11th August, 1621. They "conceived no inconvenience at present" in the proposed colony; but they objected on account of the expense to furnishing "shipping or other chargeable favour." They thought that "for the securing of the plantacion in his Ma'ties obedience," the said families should not settle in one body with the rights specified, but should be scattered "by convenient numbers in the principall Citties, Borroughs and corporacions in Virginia."*

This response was far from being satisfactory to the Walloons. Divided among the English settlements, how could they preserve their Calvinistic worship, their native tongue, their own gentry? Only a scattered few of them drifted to Virginia.

* See the entire document in App., par. 23d.

CHAPTER V.

THE WALLOON EMIGRATION OF 1623-24.

Jesse de Forest and his comrades had now been driven to look outside of England for assistance in founding their colony.

For eight months he quietly awaited some favorable turn of events in Holland. Then, finding that the Dutch had not yet matured their West India Company, he in April, 1622, petitioned the powerful local parliament known as the "States of Holland and West Friesland," to provide means for "conveying families to the West Indies," a geographical phrase which in those times meant America, whether northern or southern.*

The States referred the paper to the directors of the as yet immature West India Company for their opinion and advice. The directors reported that they considered the proposal "very advantageous for the Company," and "that an effort ought to be made to promote it" by promising that the petitioners should be employed. But in regard to immediate practical action they asked time to complete the organization of their board.

Thereupon, on the 21st of April, 1623, "the Lords, Gentlemen and Cities of Holland and West Fries-

* At my application, favored by our Legation at the Hague, renewed search has been made for this petition, but in vain. I obtained, however, an official copy of the Resolutions of April 21 and August 27, 1622. See Appendix, paragraphs 24 and 25.

land unanimously resolved and agreed that the aforesaid promise shall be made, the magistracy being made acquainted therewith."

The final phrase of the resolution suggests that the petition called for leave to recruit colonists in the cities of the republic, which is precisely what Jesse de Forest demanded four months later, and what he was eventually commissioned to do. I assume, therefore, that he was the author of the petition of April, just as he was certainly the author of the petition of August. At all events no name but his appears in connection with either of these papers: and it would be difficult to divine what other person could be pushing a Walloon emigration to America:—difficult to divine and impossible to put in evidence.

The "Memorial History of New York" has referred the April petition to families residing in Amsterdam. This statement is unsupported by any authority which I have been able to discover; but even if it could be established, it would not exclude Jesse de Forest from the authorship of the document. In Amsterdam lived his mother, his brother Melchior and his married sister Anne, wife of the coffee-merchant Jean Le Fèvre. It is probable that he was repeatedly there during his absences from Leyden, and it is indisputable that he had there friends who could be his zealous and capable agents.

For four months the Resolutions of April, 1622, bore no practical fruit that we know of. Then de Forest wearied of the slow hatching of the West India Board, or perhaps the directors of the Company requested him to aid them in hastening matters at the national headquarters. On the 26th of August, 1622,

he petitioned the States General for "authorization to inscribe and enroll, for the colonies, families of the Christian Reformed Religion willing to make the voyage to the West Indies (America) for the advancement and service of the West India Company."

The States General had just then much to think of, for the twelve years' truce with Spain had expired, and war had recommenced. They considered the petition, and they mysteriously referred it to somebody else, just as perplexed or wary statesmen do things now. They referred it down to the States of Holland and West Friesland; and the responsibility of action was promptly shouldered by that local legislature, all thanks and honor to it!

On the 27th of August, 1622, the Representative Councils of these states, "taking action on the aforesaid petition, charged and authorized the said Jesse des Forest, as they do hereby charge and authorize him, to inscribe and enroll for the colonies all families having the qualifications requisite for being of use and service to the country, the same to be transported to the West Indies; under condition that the said Forest* so does with the mutual knowledge and concurrence of the magistrates of the respective cities where he may inscribe and enroll as above mentioned, and that he be bound to furnish a report thereof to the Lords Gentlemen" (of the States General.)†

* In Europe the "de" is considered a prelude to the name, and is often omitted when the name is repeated in a document.

† The Dutch original is at the Hague. Baird quotes a brief French version, furnished him from Leyden. De Forest's report of his enrollment of colonists has been sought for me in vain, by the Hague officials.

No doubt "the said Jesse des Forest" went bravely at his enrolling, though all record of it has passed beyond human knowledge, his report having been lost. The wife and five children whom he had proposed to take to Virginia were presumably of the company which would sail to Dutch America. Meanwhile there occurred in the family a pious preparation for the expected voyage across the then awful Atlantic. In February, 1622, Henri de Forest, not quite sixteen years old, joined the church by profession of faith, and in June his elder brother Jean followed his example, as also their sister Rachel, a child of thirteen.*

Larger recruitings and outfittings than those of Jesse de Forest were at this time going on in the Netherlands. The colonial projects of the Holland merchants and statesmen were on a scale of surprising breadth and power. One vessel, to be followed by others, would plant settlements on the Hudson, the Delaware and the Connecticut. A numerous and mighty fleet under Admiral Willekens was to surprise Brazil and wrest it from Spain, while a smaller fleet should seize the coasts of Congo and Angola, with a view to obtaining abundant slaves, and perhaps also negro soldiers, for the conquered regions. Certain vessels were to establish trading posts and colonies in the Caribbean islands and along the "Wild Coast," meaning the northern shore of South America from the Brazilian frontier to the Gulf of Maracaibo. A reserve squadron, as large as that of Willekens, would support his movement by clearing the Atlantic of Spanish war-ships, and forwarding to him his needed

* App., par. 16.

African laborers and recruits. The fleet for Brazil and the Wild Coast alone counted twenty-three ships and three clipper yachts, carrying five hundred cannon and manned by sixteen hundred sailors and seventeen hundred soldiers, besides colonists.*

In this broadspread scene of Batavian warfare and colonization Jesse de Forest suddenly disappears from distinct sight. We have reached a point in his story where narration must give way to inference and surmise. It seems clear, however, that his first colonizing venture, perhaps his only one, was to that part of South America which the Dutch called indifferently the Wild Coast, or Guiana. Here were hundreds of miles of shore which the Spaniards had left unsettled, partly because of the torrid and malarious climate, partly because of the stubborn hostility of the savage natives. † To this region two successive bands of settlers were despatched from Leyden, one evidently in a vessel of the so-called "June fleet" of 1623, the other in a ship and two yachts which sailed from the Meuse late in December of the same year.

About all that we know of the June fleet is contained in a work styled "A Historical Account of all

* Netscher's *Hollandais au Brazil*; Southey's *Hist. of Brazil*; De Laet, *passim*.

† For proof that Guiana was the Wild Coast, see Documents Relative to the Colonial History of New York, vol. 1st, p. 62. "The Guiana country which we call the Wild Coast"; also "the country (Guiana) is bounded by the great river of the Amazons." 1634. See further the same vol., 223; Dutch ships not belonging to the West India Co. may trade "even to Curacao, Bien Aire and Aruba, without being at liberty to go further eastward on the Wild Coast, much less to the Amazons." 1648. Nor do the N. Y. Dutch records call any other shore the Wild Coast; see the Index of the above Documents.

the Memorable Events in Europe, Asia and Africa, happening from 1621 to 1632," written by Nicholas de Wassenaer, physician at Amsterdam, and published in annual volumes, each relating to the affairs of the previous year. His disappointingly brief statement concerning the squadron in question opens as follows :

" June, 1623. The directors of the West India Company, considering that by order of the States" (vacating government posts to make room for the Company's settlers) "the people of this country have left the coasts of the West Indies, sent thither, in order to keep affairs in train, the Orange Tree, the Grasping Eagle and the Love, hoping to attain an early advantage of the Company, though it is not yet organized."*

Wassenaer also has something to relate concerning the eastward voyage of this squadron. The Grasping Eagle, laden with tobacco and logwood, cleared from Buen Aire, an island a little east of the gulf of Maracaibo and two degrees from the coast of South America, reached home in December, 1623. The Love with a similar cargo, apparently from the same island, returned in January, 1624. The Orange Tree, touching at Hispaniola and San Domingo, then on the 28th January, 1624, at Plymouth, where she was detained for weeks by an Order in Council, did not recover Holland till March. †

* Wassenaer, vol. V, p. 92.

† Wassenaer, vol. VI, pp. 61, 84, 85. The detention of the Orange Tree (150 tons) at Plymouth is mentioned in the Documents Relating to the Col. Hist. of N. Y.

The June fleet brought back cargoes of logwood and tobacco. But what had it carried out to the shores of the Caribbean Sea? Had it touched nowhere but at the little island of Buen Aire? Perhaps we can learn something as to its doings from the following fragment of a letter, preserved by Wassenaer, written on the 31st of December, 1623, from Wyapoko, now called Oyapok, a river which separates French Guiana from northeastern Brazil.

"The epistle of our captain," it begins, "will sufficiently inform you of the success of our voyage and of the goodly nature of the country we dwell in. We have visited the Amazonas and arrived at Wyapoko where we now are. . . . We expect the families from Holland here. Meantime we will examine in our boat the three rivers of our gulf, as well as the neighboring country.*

"The families that they look for," adds Wassenaer, "are going thither from Leiden." !!

We shall now attempt to discover what Leiden proposed to send forth and when. Ten days before the above letter was written on the Wild Coast, Gerard de Forest filed a petition which deserves a place in the colonial history of Holland. It must be understood that the dyers of Leiden were divided into two classes, those favored ones who had a permit to dye in colors, and those who might dye only in black. Jesse belonged to the former class, and Gerard to the latter. Apparently an agreement had been entered into between them to the effect that, if Jesse went abroad, Gerard might apply for the vacated privilege.

* Wassenaer, VI, 68-70.

At all events Gerard did thus apply, either on or before the 21st of December, 1623, as we learn from a brief of his petition in the Aldermanic Record of Leiden. As the brief is an important paper, and as its leading date escaped both Riker and Baird, I copy it in full.*

“Court Journal L: fol. 52.

“de Gerard des Forest.

“To the honorable gentlemen of the Court: Gerard des Forest, a dyer of this city, respectfully announces that his the petitioner's brother Jesse des Forest, who by virtue of your admission has dyed wools and camelets in this city, removed from here by the last ships which sailed from here for the West Indies; and accordingly he the petitioner would be glad to be employed in dyeing in colors. Hetherefore prays and requests that you will be pleased to admit him, in view of the fact that he will not increase the number, but only succeed to the place of his absent brother. Which doing, etc., etc.

(Margin). “Let this be placed in the hands of the Superintendants and Governors of the chief Drapers' Guild here, that they may communicate to the Court of this City their advice concerning this request, in order that, said advice having been heard, proper action may be taken in the matter.

“Done at the meeting of the Court of this City on the 21st of December, 1623. In my presence: S. v. Baersdorp.”

* Riker's *Hist. of Harlem*, p. 94, gives the date of January 4th, 1624, and no other; Baird alters this to January 24th, 1624, which is altogether erroneous; neither of them mention the date of Dec. 21st, 1623. My copy of the paper is an official one, furnished by Mr. Charles M. Dozy, archivist of Leiden.

At another session of the Burgomasters, just a week later, was issued the following order :

"The Court having first heard the advice of the aforesaid Superintendants and Governors, has hereby admitted and given permission to the petitioner to dye in colors wools and camelets here, provided he takes the customary oath to the Burgomasters and Rulers of this City, and conducts himself according to rules and regulations made and hereafter to be made with regard to the said dyeing.

"Done at their meeting on the 4th of January, 1624. In my presence: S. v. Baersdorp."

During that week, between the first of these aldermanic sessions and the second, the major part of Willekens' fleet had left Holland for Brazil and Guiana, bearing thousands of fighting men and an uncertain number of colonists, of whom one was Jesse de Forest. De Laet's statement of this departure translates as follows :

"Of this fleet nineteen ships, among them the ship of the Admiral, left the Texel and the mouth of the Ems the 21st and 22nd of December (1623); the 23rd one ship and two small ones sailed out of the Maas (Meuse); the 25th of January, 1624, the vessel of the vice-Admiral went from the Goeree (near Amsterdam); on the 26th of January, from Zealand, two ships and one small one; in all, 26."

The only vessels in this fleet which closely concern Jesse de Forest are the "one ship and two small ones" which sailed out of the Meuse, twenty miles south of Leiden, on the 23rd of December. They should be connected with the following item in a "List of the Effects of the West India Company," in 1626, pre-

served in the records of Holland. "One ship and two yachts destined for the trade of the Amazon and the Coast of Guiana, with the cargoes,—florins 80,000."*

It will be observed that these three vessels did not quit the coast of Holland until December 23rd, two days after the briefing of Gerard de Forest's petition in which he spoke of his brother as having sailed for the West Indies. But the sailing may have been fixed for the 21st, and Gerard may have trusted to that when he presented his request. At all events a man on board a ship, at the mouth of the Meuse, had at least removed from Leiden and was little likely to return immediately.

We do not know how many colonists accompanied Jesse de Forest to Guiana. We suppose, without being able to prove it, that his ship bore the families from Leiden which the settlers at Oyapok expected when they wrote home on the 21st of December, 1623. Those families undoubtedly made a successful voyage and joined their predecessors. Some months later, probably during April, 1624, they were visited by the New Netherland, then on her colonizing voyage to the shores of the Hudson. Were they in prosperous state, and disposed to remain on the Wild Coast? It is possible that these queries might be answered by

* Docs. Rel. to Col. Hist. of New York, vol. I, p. 35, under date of 1626. The same List shows "one ship of about 130 lasts (260 tons) and one yacht, destined for the trade and colonization of New Netherland, estimated, at least, florins 120,000." Evidently the New Netherland and the Mackerel. I assume that vessels listed in 1626 existed in 1623, especially as no record remains of losses during the interval.

records in Holland relating to Dutch colonizings in South America.*

In our day, when Guiana is still very bare of men and wealth, while what was once New Netherland has a prosperous population of several millions, it seems at first glance surprising that Jesse de Forest should have emigrated in person to the former instead of to the latter. But to the Hollanders of 1623 northern South America promised to be of vastly more importance than the country of the Delaware and Hudson. From New Netherland they hoped to draw nothing more than furs, tobacco, and building timber. From the Caribbean Islands, Guiana and Brazil they expected dye-woods, coffee, gold, and perhaps spices and jewels. To the Hudson they sent but two vessels, the *New Netherland* and the little *Mackerel*. To South America they sent a fleet of twenty-six sail, bearing thousands of mariners and soldiers, besides colonists. Such evidently was their idea of the relative value of the two regions to Holland. Doubtless Jesse de Forest, when he sailed in latter December, 1623, for eastern Guiana, believed that he had chosen wisely in preferring the basin of the Oyapok to the land of the Mohicans and Mohawks. He might help to found Greater New York, but how could he foresee it?

Let us turn to the emigrants, presumably of Jesse de Forest's enrolling, who sailed for the Hudson some ten weeks after he sailed for Guiana. From page 11 of volume seventh of Wassenaer's contemporary

* The N. Y. Commission of 1840 refused to copy all such Holland documents as did not directly concern the New Netherland and adjoining regions.

narrative, as translated by Mr. George R. Howel, I excerpt the following statement :

"The West India Company having been chartered to explore rivers, did not neglect the same, but in the spring (of 1624) * equipped a ship of 130 lasts (260 tons) called the *New Netherland*, whose master was Cornelis Jacobsen Mey of Hoorn, with a company of thirty families, most of whom were Walloons, to plant a colony there. In the beginning of March they sailed and directed their course for the Canary Islands and steered for the *Wild Coast*; and a favorable wind happily brought them in the beginning of May into the River formerly known as the River of the Mountains, now called the *Mauritius River*, lying in forty and one-half degrees." (The Hudson.)

One guesses that Mey, having reached the Canaries, pushed across the Atlantic to Guiana, not because this was the easiest way to get from Holland to the Hudson, but because he had weighty reasons for touching at Oyapok. Did he transport thither reinforcements and supplies? Did he pick up Jesse de Forest and carry him northward to settle with his other enrolled Walloons at Fort Orange or on Manhattan Island?

Unable to answer these fascinating queries, I return to the known facts of the founding of New York.

No list of Mey's emigrants has survived; but we are certain that two of them were Philippe du Trieux and his wife Jacqueline Noiret; two others may have been Simon de Rapalje and his wife Catherine Tricot, better known as Caterina Trico.

* This date (1624) is in the margin and also at the head of the chapter.

In the mouth of the Hudson Mey found two craft, a Dutch armed yacht called the Mackerel, and a Frenchman who was about to land for the purpose of setting up the arms of France. "But the Hollanders would not permit him," relates Wassenaer, "opposing it by the orders of their High Mightinesses the States General and the Directors of the West India Company." And to make sure of the legality of their case they manned a pinnace carrying two guns and convoyed him out of the river. The incident is notable, as showing that there was then no Dutch garrison, or official occupancy, on the shores of New York Bay, and that the Protestant Walloon colony had arrived just in time to save the region from pre-emption by a great Catholic power. If Jesse de Forest's repeated petitions and persevering recruitments were efficient in bringing about this result, though only this, he deserves a niche in American history.

Four settlements were established by Mey; the principal one at Fort Orange long since known as Albany; another, of much strategical importance, on the lower Hudson; another, Fort Nassau, on the Delaware a little below the site of Philadelphia; the fourth, small and temporary, near the mouth of the Connecticut. The evidence of Caterina Trico on this subject, taken when she was over eighty years old, is of small value. Her two affidavits contradict each other; she had forgotten the name of the ship and of the captain; she was not even sure of the year.*

From trustworthy contemporaneous Wassenaer we learn that the upper fort, in the country of the May-

* She hesitated between 1623 and 1624.

kens, or Mohicans, had four bastions and a topping of palisades. A smaller work was Fort Wilhelmus, situated on Murderer's Island, a spot as yet not identified. "It was for the defence of the lower river," explains Wassenaer. "On leaving there you lay your course for the west wind, and having got it, to the Bermudas, whence homeward by the current."

Obviously a spot within easy reach of the sea. It might even be Manhattan Island, for we learn that Murderer's Island was at one time called Prince's Island, a suggestion that it must have been one of the nobler islands of the bay. Strange indeed would it be if the warlike and maritime Hollanders should have failed to perceive that the site of New York city was the strategic and commercial centre and key of their New Netherland, including under that term all the lands between the Connecticut, the upper Hudson and the Delaware.

The forts being built, or partly so, the colonists "forthwith put the spade into the ground," says Wassenaer; "and before the Mackerel sailed the grain was nearly as high as a man, so that they were bravely advanced."

A great historical event was unconsciously chronicled in these simple words. The first permanent, cultivating, town-building settlement of New York had been accomplished by a handful of French-speaking Protestants, recruited and enrolled by Jesse de Forest of Avesnes. Since then civilized man has not for one moment relinquished his hold on the shores of the Hudson, but has prospered there beyond all other colonizing example, developing millions of population and uncountable wealth.

The settlers wrote home in good spirits by the Mackerel, which reached Amsterdam in August. "We were much charmed on arriving in this country," they said. "Here we found beautiful rivers, bubbling fountains flowing down into the valleys, basins of running water in the flat-lands, and agreeable fruits in the woods, such as strawberries, walnuts and wild grapes. There is considerable fish in the rivers and good tillage land. Especially is there free coming and going without fear of the naked natives of the country. Had we cows, hogs and other cattle fit for food (which we daily expect in the first ships) we would not wish to return to Holland."*

The good ship *New Netherland* recrossed the Atlantic in 1624, bearing a cargo of furs and other articles worth over 28,000 guilders, which was sold in Amsterdam on the 20th December of that year. †

Who was in charge of this feeble colony, so magnificent in its destinies, during the early stages of its existence?

"Cornelis Mey of Hoorn was in 1624 the first director there," wrote Wassenaer in 1626. "Willem van Hulst was the second, in the year 1625. The Honble Peter Minuit is director there at present."

Concerning Jesse de Forest we can furnish no further important information. After December 21st, 1623, there is no mention of him in the records of Leiden except two entries opposite his name in a tax-list, "Gone to the West Indies," which then meant, we must remember, any portion of the two Americas.

* *Doc. Hist. of N. Y.*, vol. 4th, p. 131.

† The same, vol. 3rd, p. 25.

It is quite as likely that death found him beside the Oyapok as beside the Hudson. But this uncertainty imports little to his deservings of remembrance. No matter what alien stars looked down upon his grave, he had aroused and directed the emigrants who founded New York, as well as those others who established a dwelling-place in Guiana and among the Caribbean islands.

Let me return here to an important question of date. In my account of the arrival of the Walloon colony in the Hudson I have accepted the year 1624 instead of 1623. Herein I follow Mr. George R. Howel, late archivist of the State of New York, who proved that Wassenaer gave the date as 1624, and that O'Callaghan changed it to 1623, as if to force a correspondence with Stuyvesant and other Dutch official authorities. It is singular that this error should have been initiated so early and persisted in so long.

In 1629 the directors of the West Indian Company, remonstrating against a truce with Spain, speak of the New Netherland as "the first country occupied by our (the Company's) people," which puts it earlier than the colony of Wyapoko, that is earlier than December, 1623. (Docs. Rel. to Col. Hist. of N. Y., vol. I, pp. 39 and 40.)

The same statement is repeated in the Company's Remonstrance against peace with Spain, dated June, 1633. (Docs. Rel., vol. I, p. 65.)

A memoir drawn up by the Company in 1641, states that "in and since 1623 four forts were built in the New Netherland, to wit: Amsterdam, Orange, Nassau and Hope." (Docs. Rel., vol. I, p. 564.)

A similar declaration to the last appears in the same Documents, vol. II, p. 133.

A "Report of the Board of Accounts on New Netherland," dated 1644, states that, "In the years 1622 and 1623 the West India Company took possession, by virtue of their charter, of the said country (the New Netherland), and conveyed thither in their ship, the New Netherland, divers colonists under the direction of Cornelis Jacobz Mey," etc., etc. (Docs. Rel., vol. I, p. 149.)

Capt. John Mason, in a letter written 2nd April, 1632, gives the date of the Dutch settlement "on the river Manahata" in these words, "as I take it, 1622." (Docs. Rel.)

Stuyvesant's claim that the colony was founded in 1623 appears in his controversial correspondence with Captain Nicoll in 1664. (Col. Hist. of N. Y., quarto, vol. III, pp. 31 and 32.)

The date 1623 appears in the narrative of the French traveler de la Croix, published in Dutch, with De Vries' additions, in 1705.

Every modern historian of New York, and every modern American historian of our colonial period, has accepted the date 1623.

Yet Wassenaer, an absolute contemporary, writing in October, 1624, puts the settlement in May, 1624, and holds to that year consistently. I feel obliged to accept his authority as conclusive.

CHAPTER VI.

SEQUEL OF THE WALLOON COLONY.

Although Jesse de Forest has disappeared from our sharpest research, we will follow the Hudson river colony of Walloons down to its submergence by the Dutch immigration, much regretting that we have no information to give concerning the colony of Wyapoko.

Of what race was Peter Minuit? In Dutch and Flemish his patronymic would be Minnewit. In French the word looks at home and has a meaning, though one marvels why an Aryan brood should be called Midnight. But perhaps Minuit has been gradually differentiated from Minutus, a very ancient family-name in northern France as well as other neo-Latin regions, and represented in Italy by Minuti. According to a French record dated 1180, one Pierre Minutus, a Cambresian knight, conjointly with one Ansel de Forest, knight, sold to a burgher of Arras named Adam a revenue of ninety-nine dimes, or church tithes.* It is not impossible that the patronymic Minutus originated in the Gallo-Roman period.

A somewhat vague witness as to the pedigree of Director Minuit is Domine Jonas Michaelius, the earliest known pastor of the church of New Amster-

* LeGlay: Glossaire Topographique de l'anc. Cambresis, p. 721. Littré calls *minuit* French, and explains it as *midnight*. Walloon form, *meienute*.

dam. Writing in 1628 to Holland, and speaking of the affairs of his newly organized congregation, he makes the following statement.

"One of those whom we have chosen (for church officers) is the honorable Director himself, and the other is the storekeeper of the Company, Jan Huyghen, his brother-in-law; persons of very good character as far as I am able to learn, having both been formerly in office in the church, the one as deacon and the other as elder in the Dutch and French churches respectively at Wesel."*

It is to be hoped that the domine's sermons were clearer than this sentence, with its confounding "the one and the other." At least one modern investigator has sought to infer from it that the official with the Dutch name was an elder in the French church, and the official with the French name a deacon in the Dutch church. This, too, although the Huguenot title for deacon is *ancien*, which means elder and not deacon (*diacre*).

For more explicit information concerning Minuit's nationality we turn to the records of Wesel as presented by pastor J. G. Sardemann of that city and by state-archivist Harless of Dusseldorf.†

Wesel, as one should know, is on the lower Rhine in the ancient duchy of Wurtemberg, not far from France and the Netherlands. During the persecutions and religious wars of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries it was an asylum for great numbers

* N. Y. Docs. Col. Hist., vol. 2d.

† For Sardemann's minute statement see the Historical Magazine (Dawson's) for April, 1868; for that of Harless see the *New York Gen. and Biog. Record* for October, 1895.

of protestant fugitives from Holland, the Walloon provinces and France. Two Dutch churches were founded there by the Dutch and Flemish exiles; and the registers of the larger one, Saint Willibrord, exhibit many Huguenot names, generally somewhat Batavized in spelling. But later the Walloons established their own conventicle, where they wrote their cognomens after their own fashion.

Among these devout refugees were Johan Minuit and his wife Sara, the parents of our director Peter, then not yet born. Unfortunately the records, both churchly and civic, fail to show whence they came and when they arrived. Johan first appears as a resident of Wesel in 1583. In the following year, January 10, he was admitted to citizenship on payment of an *awm* of wine and four rix dalers. In 1598, February 18, "Jan" Minuit and his wife Sara baptized a son Jan. In May, 1607, there was publication of bans of marriage between their daughter Maria Minuit and Gerrit Hasenkamp. Johan Minuit senior must have died not much later, for on the 10th of March, 1609, Gerrit Hasenkamp and Solomon Fonteyn were appointed guardians of his son Peter, obviously still a minor.*

This appears to be the earliest surviving record of the name of Director Peter Minuit. Thus his birth date remains doubtful, but it is certain that he was not a child in 1609, for on the 11th October, 1616, he was made guardian of the minor children of Gerrit Hasenkamp his brother-in-law. From all these facts we may divine that he was born in Wesel between 1588 and 1595, and that his parents were Huguenot

* Records at Wesel and Dusseldorf cited above.

refugees, probably Walloons. This is the conclusion of pastor Sardemann, who investigated the subject patiently and thoroughly. But why does not Peter Minit's name appear on some of the ecclesiastical records of Wesel? Because, explains Sardemann, the Huguenot registers are "mostly lost," and the surviving fragments not altogether legible. Meantime the Dutch and German books are in good preservation, but do not exhibit Peter Minit, whether as deacon or communicant. We may understand at last, therefore, that Michaelius meant to style him "an elder in the French church at Wesel."

Minit's social position in the city was respectable. "The families with which he was connected," says Sardemann, "for instance those of Hasenkamp, Fonteyn and Huyghen, were prominent for their riches." He adds that in 1612 William Huyghen, probably one of Minit's brothers-in-law, was a deacon in the Dutch church. We may infer that this William was a brother of Jan Huyghen who in 1626 went to New Amsterdam, and also a brother of Hendrick Huyghen, native of Cleves, who in 1638 accompanied Minit to New Sweden.*

Let us return to Minit's fragmentary history at Wesel. In 1616 (Oct. 11) he and one Samuel Fonteyn† appear as guardians of the minor children of Maria Minit and Gerrit Hasenkamp. In 1619

* Justin Winsor's *New Sweden*.

† "Charel Fonteyn, a Frenchman and wife," passengers by the *Gilded Beaver* in 1658, appear among the "Early Immigrants to the New Netherland":—see *Doc. Hist. of New York*, 3d volume, p. 33. This "Frenchman and wife" may have belonged to the Fonteyns of Wesel. The usual French form of the name is Fontaine, but those were days of freedom in spelling.

(March 5) he was appointed co-guardian of a minor child of Samuel Fonteyn, at the request of guardian Henrich Briels, citizen of Emmerich. In 1625 (April 15) he is recorded as having "left for foreign parts"; his wife too had gone to Cleves, where there was a brood of Huyghens, her relatives.

Somewhat later the magistrates of Wesel summoned Minuit to account for certain papers appertaining to his ward, the junior Fonteyn. A second summons brought a reply from him to the effect that he would send his accounts to his fellow guardian Berndt von Briels,* because, owing to a quarrel with one commissary Ruiss, he did not dare to return to Wesel, and moreover was about to undertake a long voyage. Subsequently the papers were demanded of his wife, who was still at Cleves; but on the 24th March, 1626, they had not yet been furnished; and thereafter the records say no more of them.†

Meantime Minuit had reached Holland, where he was received as a person of high deservings and promptly appointed to responsible office. Why was he selected to be director general of the New Netherland? Probably to conciliate the Walloons, for though born in Wurtemberg, he was of their race and doctrine, and he must have spoken their tongue. It is worth remarking in this connection that Wassenaer writes of the emigrants of 1624 as "freemen" who should be ruled gently and by persuasion, lest they might take offence and "fly to the neighboring provinces." They were not Hollanders; they were not

* Perhaps son of Henrich.

† Records at Wesel and Dusseldorf, as cited. Perhaps something more might be found at Cleves.

held by patriotism and speech to a Dutch colony ; they must be coaxed to remain in it.

On the 19th of December, 1625, Minuit set sail on the Sea Mew from Amsterdam for the mouth of the Hudson. There was a long struggle with ice in the Texel, perhaps followed by a detour to Guiana ; and it was not till May 4th, 1626, that he reached the Island of Manhattan. His skipper was Adraien Joris Tienpont, who had made the same port three years earlier as mate under Cornelis Jacobsen Mey, and who must have been able to tell him much about the Walloon colony.

The Director General's presence was direly needed in the neglected and hitherto imperfectly organized province. There was bloody trouble about this time at Fort Orange among the wooded hills of the upper Hudson. Commander Krieckenbeek had marched at the head of six soldiers to aid the Mohicans against the Mohawks ; but falling into an ambush of archery, he had been killed with three of his men and many of his allies ; the victors conferring immortal renown on Tymen Bouwensz by devouring him "after they had well cooked him."*

Minuit sent Peter Barentsen up the river to take command in place of Krieckenbeek. The Mohawks, anxious for trade, eagerly excused themselves for their victory, on the ground that they had been attacked, and entered into friendly relations with the Dutch, which were never again broken.

Barentsen found Fort Orange far from prosperous ; the eighteen original families of settlers (if there ever were so many) had diminished to eight ; and, outside

* Wassenaer in the Doc. Hist. of New York, 3d vol.

of these forty or fifty Walloons, the only inhabitants were "ten or twelve seamen in the Company's service." Minuit decided to concentrate the population of his feeble colony. Fort Orange was left in charge of sixteen men, and the families there were ordered to remove to Manhattan Island, where they would be joined by the five or six families of Fort Nassau on the Delaware.* It is worth observing that, even previous to this consolidation, the settlement on New York Bay contained two-thirds, if not three-fourths, of the population of New Netherland. Topography had made it the military key and commercial center of the province; and one suspects that it was the principal seat of inhabitation from the first arrival of the Walloons.

The prospective increase of population at Fort Amsterdam demanded an increase of land for cultivation. At some unknown date previous to September 23d, 1626, Minuit "bought the island of Manhattes from the wild men for the value of sixty guilders."† The tract was estimated at 11,000 morgen, or something over 22,000 acres; and sixty guilders in coin would amount to twenty-four standard American dollars. The price seems absurdly small at the present day, but the purchases by the New England settlers were on much the same scale of value, and no doubt Minuit paid all that the savages demanded for their thirty-five square miles of rocky and swampy woodland, plentifully stocked with pumas, lynxes and rattlesnakes. Wild land can

* Wassenaer, in *Doc. Hist.*, 3d vol.

† Schaeghen's letter in *Memorial Hist. of New York*, 1st vol., 159.

be bought as cheap now, along the coasts of Labrador and Mozambique, which may in future ages exhibit populous cities.

Walloon New Amsterdam was one of the humblest capitals of earth. Its families, including those of the Wallabout, numbered two hundred souls. The Company's counting-house was of stone, but it was thatched with reeds. The dwellings of the colonists were mere bark-covered lodges, about thirty in number, which stretched unguarded along the western shore of the island on a line running nearly north and south.*

In 1628, on the 7th of April, arrived Domine Jonas Michaelius, already mentioned as the first known pastor of the colony. His one discovered letter, dated August 11th and addressed to Domine Smoutius of Amsterdam, gives us some interesting particulars concerning the lonely little Huguenot "city of refuge."

"We had, at the first administration of the Lord's Supper, full fifty communicants, both Walloon and Dutch; of whom a portion made their first confession of faith before us, and others exhibited their church certificates. Others had forgotten to bring their certificates, not thinking that a church would be established here; and some who brought them over had unfortunately lost them in a general conflagration.

"We administer the Holy Sacrament of the Lord once in four months, provisionally, until an increased number of people shall otherwise require. The Walloons and French have no service on Sundays otherwise than in the Dutch language, which few of

* Wassenaer in Doc. Hist. of N. Y.

them cannot understand. A portion of the Walloons are going back to fatherland, either because their years here have expired, or else because some are not very serviceable to the Company.

"Some of them live far away, and could not come on account of heavy rains and storms, so that, under such uncertainty, it was not advisable to appoint a special service for so small a number. Nevertheless, the Lord's Supper was administered to them in the French manner and according to the French form, with a preceding discourse which I had before me in writing, for I could not trust myself extemporaneously."*

Possibly we owe the unlucky loss of the records of the Walloon colony to the "general conflagration" mentioned by Michaelius.

Those persons whom he describes as dwelling "far away" may have been settlers on Staten Island or at the Wallabout (Walloon bight). It is worth noticing, in passing, that the Huguenots seem to have lived scattered among the natives and on perfectly good terms with them. The formidable name of pugnacious Commander Krieckenbeek proves that he was a Dutchman.

It appears that some of the Walloons had come to America under contract to remain a stated number of years. This was nothing unusual in the colonizing enterprises of that period. Servants and indentured persons, whether bound to individuals or to corporations, were by no means rare among our early emigrants. They were somewhat numerous in the population sent over by the Virginia Company. Even the democratic colony of the Mayflower, only one hundred and two in number, contained twenty-

* Docs. Rel. to Col. Hist. of New York, 2d vol., 764.

two servants and people under contract. But the language of Michaelius indicates that the Walloons were bound to the West India Company as colonists rather than to individuals as laborers.

By August, 1628, the families of Fort Orange and of the Delaware had all arrived at New Amsterdam. "The population," writes Wassenauer, "consists of two hundred and seventy souls, including men, women and children. They remain as yet outside of the fort, in no fear, as the natives live peaceably with them."

The agriculture of the Walloons was toilsome and by no means productive, partly because the soil of Manhattan Island is naturally unfruitful, and partly because of a scarcity of cattle and laborers. Domine Michaelius could buy neither milk, butter, nor cheese, and was forced to live mainly on ship stores, such as salt fish, beans, peas and barley. Yet fine fish of many kinds swarmed in the sea and rivers, while the land abounded in game, fruits, pasturage, and farming possibilities. The trouble lay in a lack of toilers to gather even the free harvests of nature. Some of the settlers were indolent or inefficient; maid-servants of a recommendable sort were not to be had; the Angola slaves were thievish, lazy and worse than useless.*

Yet there was industry, and it produced results. The cold winters sharply demanded much firewood and many fur garments. More lumber was cut than the few merchantmen from Holland could carry away. A gristmill and a sawmill, both driven by wind, came into existence, startling the waddling bears and crawling pumas with their humming.† In

* Michaelius and Wassenauer, *passim*.

† Is this the mill owned by Francois Molemaecher, in the loft of which scripture readings were held as early as in 1626, and where Michaelius preached in 1628 to "fully fifty communicants?"

1630 two Walloon shipwrights launched a vessel variously estimated at 800 or 1200 tons, and despatched it to the old country as an advertisement of colonial timber and business enterprise.*

In 1630 appeared the Dutch patroons, Godyn, Bloemart, Pauw and Van Rensselaer, bringing their swarms of tenants and demanding broad estates. Walloon New Netherland rapidly became Hollandized, although more Walloons were still to arrive. There was no further need of the Walloon director, and the West India Company promptly turned him adrift. In 1632 Minuit was charged with having been over liberal of land to the patroons, and was removed to make room for Van Twiller, a relative of the greatest of the patroons, Van Rensselaer.

But he knew how to avenge himself for this injustice. He was the author, manager and first director of that Swedish colony which in 1638 settled the eastern shore of Delaware in spite of the protests of the Dutch. Thus one Walloon aided to found Guiana and New Netherland, while another was the founder of New Sweden; and both came very near being forgotten by this busy world, while no man knoweth their graves to this day.

According to one story Minuit sailed in 1638 from the Delaware to the West Indies and perished by shipwreck off the island of St. Christopher. Another tale is that he returned to Europe, and another that he died in 1641 at Fort Christina.†

* Michaelius and Wassenaer.

† For his closing years see Justin Winsor's *New Sweden* and the *Memorial History* of New York.

CHAPTER VII.

PERMANENT SETTLEMENT IN AMERICA.

ISAAC DE FOREST.

Isaac de Forest, the seventh recorded child of Jesse de Forest and Marie du Cloux, was baptized in Leyden, Holland, on the 10th of July, 1616.*

In default of documentary evidence we can merely assume that he accompanied his parents to Oyapok in the emigration of 1623, and that he returned to Leyden in 1626 with his widowed mother and his brothers. From this latter year down to 1636 no record that I am aware of reveals anything as to his life.

But there is some slight information extant concerning others of the family during this period. The widow resided in the Voldersgraft, a street near St. Peter's church, Leyden; and it is probable that she supported herself by boarding students of the University. † Among her lodgers was Doctor Jean Mousnier, surnamed for unknown reasons La Montagne, a native of Saintonge, in western France, ‡ who had arrived in Holland with his father some years previous. In the Walloon "round-robin" of 1621 the elder man is recorded as "pharmacist and surgeon," and the junior as "student in medicine." The tremulous handwriting of the surgeon indicates

* Walloon ch. registers; Appendix, par. 16.

† Riker's Hist. of Harlem, p. 95.

‡ Ibid, p. 53.

that he had passed the prime of life ; and if he joined in the emigration to any part of America, he probably died there.

The son returned to Leyden, and inscribed himself at the University as a medical student, on the 7th of July, 1626, * probably not long after the arrival of the vessel which brought him and his friends the de Forests from the western shores of the Atlantic. He was a man of character and ability, imbued with a spirit of adventure, and destined to play a conspicuous part in the history of New Netherland.

On the 27th of November, 1626, "Jean Mounier (La Montagne) subscribed in marriage with Ragel de Foree," the witnesses being the bride's uncle, "Geraerd de Foree," and his wife Hester de la Grange. † The novel spelling of the names is accounted for by the fact that the record is in Dutch. Jean Mousnier la Montagne was at this time thirty-one years old, while his wife could not have been above seventeen. Subsequent records show that they emigrated to Tobago, an island off the northern coast of South America, then belonging to the Dutch. ‡

It may be that this movement was followed by other members of the de Forest family. On the 26th of July, 1629, one of Rachel's younger brothers, the Jesse who had been baptized in 1615, left Leyden with a church letter of recommendation for The name of the place is illegible ; but one guesses that it may have been Tobago. The climate of that tropical island is enfeebling to many northerners, so that we need not wonder that nothing further is known of Jesse de Forest junior, nor that his sister

* Riker, p. 95.

† Appendix, par. 17.

‡ Idem.

returned in 1631 to Leyden, leaving her husband behind her.* Five years later La Montagne himself reappeared in Holland, renewing his membership at the University on the 3d of March, 1636. †

The de Forests had now tried emigration to the mainland and the islands of South America, with the sole result of impoverishment, suffering and defeat. But in the latter half of 1636 there was another movement among them to plant their name in the new world. Henry de Forest, now thirty years old, and his brother Isaac, ten years younger, decided to settle at New Amsterdam as tobacco planters. Two laborers, Tobias Teunisen and Willem Fredericks Bont, were engaged and indentured for three years of service after their arrival in America. It is possible that Henry increased his capital by his marriage with Gertrude Bornstra, the eldest daughter of a respectable Dutch family living in the grazing district of Nieuwland. ‡ At all events, both of the brothers, as well as La Montagne, seem to have been provided with sufficient means to make a prosperous start in the new migration.

The de Forests sailed first, quitting Amsterdam the first of October, 1636, in a small vessel called the *Rensselaerwick* which belonged to Killian van Rensselaer, the first Patroon. The La Montagnes followed in the winter, reaching the Hudson early in the spring. Meantime Rachel's brothers had chosen a site for their tobacco plantation.

* App., par. 17. I have sought in vain to obtain records from Tobago.

† Riker, p. 99.

‡ Riker, p. 100.

The upper portion of New York island was then a mere wilderness of virgin forest and natural clearing, inhabited by bears, catamounts, painted Wiekasqueeks and other savage creatures, and giving small promise of the vast civilized population which now loads the soil of Harlem. To settle there was to risk life and fortune, as the events of the following decade proved. But as yet no white man habited there, and land could be had in cheap abundance. The de Forests fixed upon a broad, fertile flat called Muscoota, and became the unprosperous founders of Harlem, pursued by indefatigable wrath of fortune like the wandering Pelasgians of Greek tradition. *

To Henry, director van Twiller granted a beautiful meadow of two hundred acres, lying between hills which rose toward the Hudson on the west, and a nameless creek which straggled southward and then eastward to empty itself into the Harlem river. Isaac obtained a strip of one hundred acres, reaching from his brother's tract down to the sluggish Harlem at a point opposite the mouth of Bronx Kill, and including not a little of the region now known as Mt. Morris Park. The patents, that is, the titles to the land, have vanished. But we may infer, from other similar documents of the period, that they contained some such provisions as here follow :

"The said de Forest and his successors shall acknowledge their High Mightinesses, the Directors of the West India Company, as their sovereign Lords and Patroons, and at the end of ten years after the actual settlement shall render the just tenth part of the products wherewith God may bless the soil, and

* See Riker's Harlem, 139-141.

from this time forth shall annually deliver, on account of the dwelling and house-lot, a pair of capons to the Director for the holidays."*

In the spring of 1637 ploughing, sowing and building commenced. Did Isaac put up a separate dwelling? Probably not at this time. There must have been too many pumas and Algonquins at hand to make a bachelor residence attractive. He doubtless shared lodgings with Henry, whose house was fairly roomy and protected, being forty-two feet long by eighteen wide, and surrounded by a palisade of heavy pickets.

This rude fortification is one of the pathetic features of the exceedingly lonely little settlement. The cattle and goats and poultry must have stood in sore need of it, and the four guns of the household probably did no little sentry business behind it. One queries whether Gertrude Bornstra, now in her blooming twenty-third year, may not have shed a few homesick tears when she remembered tranquil Nieuwlant. But her troubles among the catamounts and redskins of Muscoota did not last long. Misfortune was hard after this latest emigrating enterprise of the de Forests. Henry, the wealthiest and apparently the ablest of the two brothers, died on the 26th of July, 1637, the cause unrecorded.

No will is known to have existed. But incidents in the settlement of the estate reveal the fact that the widow was in some way the sole heir. Isaac appears as owning a small portion of the moveable property, and as having other claims of uncertain nature and

* See patent to Andries Hudde, June 7, 1629 : Riker, 144. The pair of annual capons reminds one of Antoine de Forest's "hief sur plumes." See Chap. 2nd, p. 34. ante.

amount. A third claimant was his brother Johannes (born at Sedan in 1604), who may have been in New Netherland at this time, although there is no record of his coming or residence or departure.

The interests of the widow were represented by dominé Everardus Bogardus as her attorney. La Montagne acted as his steward, taking personal charge of the plantation, pushing the construction of the buildings, furnishing capital and presenting final accounts. One-sixth of the movable estate satisfied the conjoint demands of Johannes and Isaac. I find no proofs of Riker's assumption that Henry and his brother had borrowed money of their uncle Gerard.

The widow soon married Andries Hudde, a wealthy planter who had been on van Twiller's Council. In 1638 there was a vendue sale for her benefit, and La Montagne bought the property for 1,700 guilders, from which were to be deducted 680 guilders expended by him in betterments. The appraisal shows five head of cattle, four goats, twenty-eight fowls, four guns, various farming utensils, a boat, two hundred pounds of tobacco, and one hundred and sixty-three florins in chattels disposed of. One-half of the boat, one-half of a bull calf and the half of two kids belonged to Isaac.

Such was the modest outfit of a settler who once farmed it in the neighborhood of Mt. Morris Park while watching against the pumas of Washington Heights and the Wickasqueeks of upper Harlem. It is questionable whether the de Forests of Avesnes had profited financially by Protestantism, exile and the founding of cities.*

* For settlement of Henry's estate see App., paragraphs 26, 27, 28; also Riker, 143-146.

The continuation of the family name in America now depended on a single unmarried youth of twenty-two. For several years Isaac remained at Harlem, raising what tobacco he could from his hundred acres, and selling it in the village of New Amsterdam for transport to Holland. Ere long his sister Rachel died, the date undiscoverable as yet, but probably in the early months of 1641. It may have been the loneliness resulting from this bereavement which led him to look up a partner for life. On the 9th of June, 1641, "Isaac de Forest of Leyden, bachelor, was married to Sarah du Trieux of New Amsterdam, spinster." *

The bride's father and mother undoubtedly came over on the New Netherland, in the famous voyage of 1624; and she may have opened her eyes in one of the bark cabins which the Walloons inhabited during the very beginnings of New York City. If she were exactly seventeen years old at the time of her marriage, her birthday would have fallen on the 9th of June, 1624. Sarah de Rapalye, who is sometimes called the eldest child of New Amsterdam, was born on the 9th of June, 1625. But the baptismal record of Sarah du Trieux has perished; and she may have been married at sixteen, or earlier, or later.

Her parents were Philippe du Trieux and his wife Jacqueline Noiret. † As I have already stated, there was a marriage in 1582, between Giles de Forest, "merchant burgher" of Avesnes, and Catherine du

* Records of Dutch Ref. Ch. of N. Y.

† Riker calls her Susannah de Chiney, from a second wife named du Chene. See records of the du Trieux in paragraphs 20 and 21 of Appendix.

Trieu, "gentlewoman" of Binche, a town not far distant. But we have no means of knowing whether this du Trieu family of Hainaut was identical with the one which appeared forty years later in New Amsterdam.

Individuals bearing the patronymic du Trieu (or Trieux) abound in the Walloon church-registers of Holland as early as 1584, wandering from city to city and from country to country, apparently in search of employment or business. One Jean du Trou, with a wife and five children, proposed to accompany Jesse de Forest to Virginia in 1621. A Philippe du Trieux whom we may safely assume as Sarah's grandfather, died in Norwich, England, previous to April, 1601. His son Philippe, the emigrant to New Netherland, resided for several years in Amsterdam, and had two children baptized there, Philippe in 1619, and Madeline in 1620. It may be that his next child was the Sarah of the bark cabin of the emigration of 1623. We know little of his life in New Amsterdam, except that in 1640 he was "court messenger," and obtained a title to lands in "Smith's Valley" on the Island of Manhattan.

The patronymic du Trieux, or de Trieu, is probably derived from the village of Trieu in Belgium. It is a widely spread name enough, and counts one family which claims heraldic arms, on what grounds I know not.*

Isaac de Forest, at the date of his marriage, already had a dwelling on his plantation, and a tobacco house also. A son Jessen, named after the first emigrant, was born in due time, and went to heaven over soon.

* See Rietstap's *Armorial General*.

In 1643 the one hundred acres were leased on shares to John Denton, and de Forest moved into the village of New Amsterdam, where he opened a tobacco warehouse in the Old Church, a deserted building which stood on the Strand, now Pearl Street. Thus he escaped personal exposure to the Indian war of 1643-45 which desolated Harlem and drove La Montagne from his plantation of Vredendal. No doubt the de Forest farm was ravaged, and tenant Denton had to suspend his tobacco culture.

The war ended in a treaty, and the Harlemites recovered their boweries. In 1647 both La Montagne and de Forest formally renewed their titles there, the former for two hundred acres, the latter for one hundred. Three years later de Forest sold the greater part of his land to Wilhelmus Beekman. Thereafter he did more or less brewing, in partnership with Johannes Verveelen, or by contract with Jacob van Couwenhoven. His malt-house and his residence were in Stone street; his hop-farm, and an orchard also, were at Norman's Bight.*

A second Indian war, running through 1655 and 1656, drove La Montagne anew from his misnamed Peacedale (Vredendal); and the bankrupted man gladly accepted the post of vice-director at Fort Orange, where he remained till the English conquest in 1664; † departing then for Holland, broken in fortune, in health and in heart. Jesse de Forest, Minuit and La Montagne, all the notable figures connected with the Walloon colonies in America, were pursued by evil fortune, and finally slept in unknown graves.

* Riker, p. 574; also App., paragraphs 30, 31, 32. † Idem.

Isaac de Forest, coming later than his father upon the scene of colonization, inherited something more of tranquility, and also a few honors and emoluments. He was one of the Nine Men (advisory committee) in 1652; inspector of tobacco in 1653; farmer of the revenue of the weigh-house in 1655 and 1656; elected *schepen*, "by forty votes," in 1656; appointed small-burgher in 1657; great-burgher and *schepen* in 1658; farmer of the tavern excise in 1660.*

His election to the common council took place on the 31st of January, 1656, and it is doubtful if he was permitted to exercise the duties of the office, inasmuch as he was not then a great-burgher. In April of the following year he petitioned for a great-burgher right, alleging that he had resided in the city upwards of twenty years, had built largely there, and performed many services.

The aldermen replied that his request could not be granted "according to the order of the Director General and Council, and the explanation of the Great and Small burgher right." Yet the Director and Council appointed him great-burgher on the 28th of January, 1658, and *schepen* five days later.† Had there been in this whole matter some "old knickerbocker" hostility to the aggrandizement of a Wallon? It is worth noting that Stuyvesant had a Huguenot wife, and that his sister had a Huguenot husband.

From 1660 onward, Isaac de Forest frequently appears in record as a money-lender, though never to the extent of more than five or six hundred guil-

* App., paragraphs 33 and 36.

† App., par. 33, dates 1657 and 1658.

ders. It is impossible to make out positively whether he was a wealthy man, or not. In 1653, when the defenses of New Amsterdam needed strengthening, he paid therefor a special tax of one hundred florins, while no one else paid more than one hundred and fifty. In April, 1664, in a petition for leave to open a lane, he claimed that his house was "an ornament to the city." In September, 1664, he was seized and held as a hostage by the English, as though he was a person of prominence and importance.

Yet in March of the same year a list "of the most affluent inhabitants of this city" rates him at only fifteen hundred florins, while many other estates range from ten thousand to fifty and eighty thousand.*

Had he possessed wealth and lost it? Had he transferred it to his wife? Had his fourteen children impoverished him? He could not have dowered them to any considerable amount, for only one of them, the eldest daughter, was married, and the eldest living son was but fifteen years old. There is no discoverable inventory of his estate, neither at the period of his own decease, nor at the decease of his wife. His will throws no light on the question, for it is a joint instrument, giving everything to survivor, and simply proving that both parties had property of unknown value.

This will was made "in the year after the nativity of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, sixteen hundred and seventy-two, the 4th of June, being Tuesday in the morning, about 9 o'clock, in the presence of Wm. Bogardus, Public Notary residing in New Yorke."

* App., par. 33, date 17th March, 1664.

The "testator was sickly and the testatrix sound in body, but both fully using their understanding, memory and speech, as outwardly appeared and could not be perceived to the contrary."

The children named in the instrument were Susannah, Johannes, Philip, Isaac, Hendricus, Maria, and David, showing that seven had fallen victims to the untoward conditions of colonial existence. Susannah, the only married one, had been for seven years the wife of Peter De Riemer. The next eldest, Johannes, a student of medicine, was twenty-two years old. Little David (named after two previous Davids) was an infant of thirty-three months.

The will permitted the survivant to marry, on condition of providing for the children, who must have "victuals and cloths," as well as "schooling for reading and writing," and moreover be taught "an art or trade." The guardians appointed were Mr. Symore Johns Romyn, the testator's "trusty and known friend," and Mr. Jacob Kip, their "Cosin," husband of Maria La Montagne, daughter of Isaac de Forest's sister Rachel.*

It was fifty-six years since Isaac de Forest had uttered his birth-cry in Leyden, and thirty-six years of that time had been passed in New Netherland, not counting a possible three years' stay there during boyhood. Barring his wife and surviving children, he was pretty well alone in the world now. Brother Henry was buried, up there at Vredendal, thirty-five years ago. Then brother Johannes had come over, and had gone back again. Also brother David had come over, and had a child baptized here, in October

* For a brief of the will see App., par. 35.

1659. But he too had gone back again, and was now in Holland, if alive, guardian to the little Van Imburchs — sister Rachel's grandchildren! — is it possible?

How time flies! How many dead! My seven little ones buried here! Lord, how many lives and tears it has cost to plant one of thy households in this new land! How many more dead than living! Uncle Gerard, eighteen years ago! — grandmother Anne, thirty-two years! — father (where is his grave?) forty-six! — brother Jesse, when? where? And we spoke French then. We said, *Notre père qui es au ciel* — what was the rest of it? Next it had to be Dutch. Now it is English. Time to get out of it, when a sickly old fellow has to learn so much — when so many have gone before. Quite, quite time — when God pleases! I shall see more of them there, beyond the Veil. No more sea to divide us! No more separations — wanderings — sorrows!

Isaac de Forest died two years after this walk homeward from notary Bogardus' office.

It is impossible to make sure whether his widow lived in affluence or otherwise. She sold the Old Kerck lot (Isaac's former tobacco house) on the 30th of June, 1683. Some ten years later, on the 9th of November, 1692, she rejoined her husband.

CHAPTER VIII.

THE STRATFORD (CONN.) DE FORESTS.

Not long after the death of Sara (du Trieux) de Forest "his Excellency Benjamin Fletsher, Esq., Governur and Cap. Generall of the Province of New Yorke and its Dependences" was petitioned by her children to grant letters of administration to two among them, "Isaacq and Hendricus." In the body of the document, mentioned as parties consenting, appear John, Susanna and Philip. The signatures read Isaac de Foreest, Henricus de Foreest, Davydt de foreest, Mrya de forest, showing that the family name had already yielded in a measure to Dutch influence.*

Doctor Johannes de Forest, eldest son of Isaac who survived him, married Susanna Verleth, but left no descendants bearing the name. Philip, husband of Tryntie Kip, became ancestor of the Albany de Forests and their branches. Isaac, husband of Lysbeth Vanderspiegel, remained in New York and left many representatives. The progeny of Hendrick and Femmettia van Flaesbeek appear both on Long Island and in New York. Susanna, as already stated, married in 1665 Peter De Riemer, father of alderman Isaac De Riemer who some years later married her sister Maria. Further information concerning the above branches may be found in Appendix, paragraph 52.

* Copied from the original ms. at Albany. No date; probably 1692 or 1693. See Appendix, par. 39.

THE BRANCH OF STRATFORD, CONNECTICUT.

DAVID DE FOREST.

"Baptized: David, son of Isaac de Foreest and Sara Dutrieux, Sept. 7, 1669: witnesses, Johannes Van Brug and Susanna de Foreest."*

Next, without an intermediate fact, we find the infant grown to manhood and signing the petition to Governor Fletcher. Then, after another lapse into the unknown, he appears to us in Stratford, Connecticut, already married to Martha Blagge, daughter of Samuel Blagge, merchant. †

The woefully tattered registers of the Congregational Church do not furnish the date of this marriage. But in certain registers which were copied long since into the Land Records, we find the following entry: "Mary Deforeest, Daughter of David Deforeest by martha his wife, born January 27th, 1696/7." (1697, N. S.) Also in the Land Records, under date of July 2nd, 1697, appears a transfer of one acre of orchard by Samuel Blagge to David "Defforeest." Next, in the church registers proper, we read, "Covenanted and were baptised, August 7th, 97, Mr. Deforest and his wife Martha." ‡

Of course one comprehends that "ff" stands for a capital F. The more correct form, "Deforest," is rather a surprise, but it is in the handwriting of Reverend Israel Chauncy, a man of superior education for a colonial region and period. In the course of

* N. Y. Gen. Rec., vol. 7, p. 131.

† Origin not traceable; but surely not a son of Capt. Benj. Blagge, as claimed in Riker's *Harlem*; perhaps a relative.

‡ App., paragraphs 41 and 42.

twenty or twenty-five years more the English ear and the English tongues of the Stratfordites invented "DeFreest" and "DeFrees." The members of the family, as appears upon their wills at Fairfield, clung for many years to DeForest, and only began to write De Forest about the close of the last century.

David De Forest during his quarter of a century at Stratford accumulated a family of ten children, and a clear estate of less than four hundred pounds, besides portioning two married daughters. This seems like penury now, but the early probate records of Stratford and Fairfield show very few properties of 1,000 pounds sterling, and not a few below 100 pounds.

His house was still standing within the memory of people now living. It was a roomy wooden dwelling with two huge stone chimneys, a short entrance-hall in the centre abutting upon a cross stairway, and apartments of good size below and above, while two wings in the rear furnished space for cooking, washing, kindling-wood and other household stores. The windows were large and sheltered by inner shutters, pierced in the lower story by a circle, in the second story by a heart. All the interior work was more or less carved; one authority says "handsomely carved"; but perhaps mere paneling and moulding. It is worth adding that grandchildren of David De Forest put up dwellings on precisely this plan of architecture and ornament.

His death occurred on the 20th of April, 1721. The inventory of the estate exhibits a few curious items. There were two Dutch Bibles, which would bring a good deal of money now, but were appraised then at only one shilling. Also, three English Bibles, in all

five Bibles, none too many for a Huguenot household. Likewise a "Dimon" (diamond) worth sixteen shillings; a gold ring, fifteen shillings; a two-pound gun, and a four-shilling sword; coat and vest and "briches," six pounds; a "periwig," ten shillings; "paper money," £6:16:5; "money" (specie), four shillings. The scarcity of money in those days is indicated by the fact that the house and homestead were appraised at only seventy pounds sterling.*

The widow received one-third of the moveable estate and the use of "one-third part of the housing and lands during her natural life." It was adjudged by the "distributors" that the eldest son, David, ought to have a double share, and that the two eldest daughters, having been married and portioned, should get nothing. The remainder of the property was equally divided among five boys and two girls. †

The ten children succeeded better than fairly well, considering the possibilities of early New England life. Mary was "Joyned in marriage" to Stephen Hawley, a member of one of the notable families of Stratford. Elnathan Wheler, the husband of Martha, left an estate which was appraised at 1,619 pounds. Josiah Marvin of Norwalk, the husband of Elizabeth, left 831 pounds in land, besides a long list of valuable chattels. David De Forest, who settled in "the parish of Wilton, Norwalk," left about 4,000 pounds, apparently in "old currency." Edward's inventory,

* Appendix, par. 46.

† Birth dates: Mary, January 27, 1697; Sarah, Nov. 9, 1698; Martha, Apr. 13, 1700; David, Apr. 24, 1702; Samuel, Apr. 4, 1704; Isaac, Apr. 14, 1706; Edward, July 25, 1708; Henry, July 4, 1710; Elizabeth, June 4, 1714; Benjamin, May 18, 1716.

though not footed up, is clearly considerable, and shows the notable item of "hard cash, 20 pounds." The estate of Abigail, wife and widow of Samuel, was appraised in 1780 at 980 pounds.*

The Stratford branch of this exiled family of Hainauters was now fully established in the agricultural life of New England. It was an industrious, self-supporting, upright and generally devout life of the austere Puritanic sort. But in regard to large financial prosperity it offered no opportunities. The De Forests remained modest farmers until the military turmoil of the Revolution, and the period of distressing taxation which immediately followed it, broke up the homekeeping habits of the young men, and sent them to the ocean, or the city, to become mariners, shippers and merchants.

Sixteen De Forests bearing the name, all of them grandsons of David of Stratford, three of them first lieutenants, served either in the Connecticut line or militia, during the war of Independence. The honorable list might be larger but that the military archives of the state are incomplete. †

BENJAMIN DE FOREST, 1ST.

Benjamin De Forest, tenth and youngest child of the emigrant to Connecticut, was born at Stratford on the 18th May, 1716. Left an orphan at the age of five, he remained for eleven years under the tutelage of his mother and her second husband, a farmer

* Appendix, par. 48.

† See Military Records of Connecticut, published by the Adj. Gen's. Office. Family archives furnish an additional name, Lt. Elisha De Forest, eventually Captain.

named John Thompson. Then, under date of 7th January, 1733, comes the record, "Benjamin Deforeest, son of David Deforeest Dec'd, chooses for guardian his brother David Deforeest, who gives bonds in 100 pounds."

Thirteen years later we find, "Benjm Deforeest & Easter Beardslee of Stratford were Joyned in marriage Aprill 18, 1744. Certified by note from m^r Gold y^t married ^m."

Other entries call his wife Easter, but her true name was Esther, may it please the "clerk." She was a daughter of Thomas Beardsley and Mary Deming, and a descendant of William Beardslee who came from England in 1635, settling at Stratford in 1639.*

Benjamin De Forest was a farmer, and apparently a successful one, judging by the prosperous start in life of his children. Thus much, together with the fact that he died at Stratford on the 17th of April, 1780, concludes his total possible biography. The Revolutionary war startled his old age; sixteen or more of his sons and nephews took part in its battlings and marchings; the British burnt Fairfield, eight miles west of him, and plundered New Haven twelve miles east of him; but concerning all these things his brief records are silent.

No doubt the war is responsible for the fact that we can find no settlement papers of the estate of Benjamin De Forest. They would naturally be at

* Stratford Genealogies: Orcutt. Benjamin's children were born as follows: Hezekiah, Dec. 14, 1745; Nehemiah, April 1, 1748; Benjamin, Dec. 28, 1749; Catherine, March 18, 1753; Esther, May 29, 1755; Isaac, Dec. 16, 1758; Othniel, Apr. 10, 1761.

Fairfield; but on the appearance of the English there in 1779, the probate records were hastily trundled away in wagons to other towns; nor were they brought back until 1795 when the court-house was rebuilt. Hence many families in that district made informal and amicable division of inherited properties.

BENJAMIN DE FOREST, 2ND.

Benjamin De Forest, son of Benjamin De Forest and Esther Beardsley, was born in Stratford, Connecticut, on the 28th of December, 1749.

He passed his life in Huntington, then the parish of Ripton in Stratford.* He married early in 1773; but the local church registers do not begin until October of that year, and a family Bible of the period has been lost; thus it is now impossible to establish the precise date of the marriage.† His wife was Mehitable Curtis, daughter of Hezekiah and descendant of William who settled at Stratford in 1639, probably an emigrant from Stratford-on-Avon.

Delicate in health, and having six young children, he took no fighting part in the Revolutionary war, but was very active on the committees of aid and relief for the patriot army.

From 1776 to the 20th of May 1782 he was "church clerk," writing his name indifferently "Deforest" or "De Forest."

* The pastor, Rev. David Ely, was husband of his cousin Hepsa Mills, granddaughter of Samuel De Forest and Abigail Peat.

† Eldest son, David, bapt. Mar. 6, 1774. For Benjamin, 2nd, see App., paragraphs 49 and 50.

In 1779, November 14, appears the entry, "Received into full Communion, Benjamin De Forest Jun. and Mehitabel wife of Benjamin De Forest Jun."

An accidental fall hastened the appearance of this closing record, "1784, August 5, Benjamin De Forest died, age 35."

His probate inventory (which is made out in pounds sterling, though dated July 25, 1789) exhibits the estate of a well-to-do New England farmer of the period. There is a silver watch, £3:12; three horses, £19; carved wood furniture, £21; four mirrors, £10. Also there are bed-shades, bed-curtains, window-curtains, and table linen, in respectable quantity. The eighty-five acres were valued at £526; the house, two barns and home-lot at £250. The dwelling, which is still in use, was of comfortable dimensions and had one corniced room, probably after the fashion of grandsire David's house at Stratford. The whole estate was rated at £962, and was undoubtedly worth at least £1,200, allowing for the usual abatements in such appraisals.*

Even now a New England farmer worth six thousand dollars would not be poor; and in those days he must have passed for rich, or something very near it. Yet, owing to the frightful taxation and general depression of values consequent on the war of independence, this estate of towards twelve hundred pounds eventually settled for but £377, of which £92 in bad debts. †

* App., par. 41.

† For later generations of this line see Appendix, paragraph 53. For the New York City, the Long Island and the Albany lines, see Appendix, par. 52.

CHAPTER IX.

DAVID C. DE FOREST.

David C. De Forest, eldest child of Benjamin De Forest and Melitable Curtis, was born at Huntington, Connecticut, on the 10th of January, 1774.

He was the seventh in descent from Melchior de Forest of Avesnes and Catherine du Fosset of Mons. His powerful frame, swarthy complexion, coarse black hair and stern black eyes revealed the ancient, long-enduring, pugnacious blood of dark Hainaut. From his youth he showed great bodily strength, and a bold, adventurous disposition. When a mere child, only a few months after the death of his father, he ran away from home to become a sailor. He was brought back, but a few years later he ran off again, and "followed the sea" until he had reached manhood.

In 1795, having inherited something from his father's estate, he set up a mercantile business at Bridgeport, Connecticut, in company with his younger brother, John. They were not the only De Forests of the Stratford lineage who about this time abandoned agricultural life for the warehouse and counting-room. Their second cousins, Lockwood, Benjamin and Alfred De Forest, became notable among the New York shippers and importers of the early half of this century. But the first commercial venture of David C. De Forest ended in tragic disaster. In 1796 the "store" at Bridgeport was

entered, the clerk who guarded it murdered, and a considerable sum of money taken. This loss, followed by an enforced collection of a loan, broke up the juvenile firm.

It is impossible to say what David C. De Forest busied himself about during the next two or three years. But the records of the war department at Washington show that, on the 3d of March, 1799, he was appointed first lieutenant in the 15th Regiment United States infantry. We were at that time in a state of sub-hostility with France. Vessels of war had been ordered and launched, and a considerable army was decreed and in part levied. In 1799 Truxton in the *Constellation* captured the French frigate *Insurgente*, and in the year following he beat the *Vengeance*. But the opposition inveighed loudly against "John Adams' army;" he was preparing to destroy the liberties of his country; he meant to be a second Caesar. Dismayed by this absurd but telling demagoguery, the administration began to reduce the national forces as a preparation for the presidential campaign of 1800, meanwhile pushing forward the negotiations which resulted in the treaty of February, 1801. On the 15th June of 1800, lieutenant De Forest was mustered out "by reason of the disbandment of his regiment." Where he had been stationed during these fifteen and a half months of presumably bloodless service does not appear in our fragmentary military records of that period.

The loss of his commission sent him back to the sea. In the latter part of 1801, as we learn from his correspondence, he was a "petty officer on a ship." Was it a government vessel, or a privateer, or a mer-

chantman? Whichever it may have been, he quitted it on the coast of Patagonia, and voyaged in some unrecorded fashion to Brazil. Everything was explained in a letter which he wrote at Rio Grande do Sul, and forwarded to his relatives in Connecticut by way of Rio Janeiro and Lisbon, so roundabout were mail routes in those days. But either that letter was not received, or it has since been lost, for we know nothing of it, except that it is mentioned in a subsequent letter from Montevideo. "It gave an account of my voyage," he says, "it described to you such parts of Patagonia and Brasil as I had seen, and informed you of my intended route to this country."

He stayed at Rio Grande long enough to pick up a few friends and to learn a little Portuguese. Then, as he wanted to acquire Spanish with a view to future commercial enterprises, he decided to go to Montevideo and Buenos Ayres. "As this journey by land," he remarks, "was never before made by a stranger, a short sketch of it may not be unacceptable."

He had been masquerading in Brazil as an Englishman traveling for pleasure, and his companions were Spaniards who had been prisoners of war, but they all got passports somehow. The party quitted Rio Grande on the 13th of January, 1802. "We had jointly hired two carts, forty-two oxen, sixteen horses, with four Portuguese, to take us and our baggage to the Spanish frontier-fortress, Santa Teresa, a distance of about 180 miles, for all of which we gave but one hundred dollars. Some of the gentlemen rode in the carts, others on horseback. From Rio Grande to the southern boundary of Brasil is about fifty miles of very flat country, without a single hill,

rock, river, or brook, and but little enclosed land. The indolent inhabitants live in houses, or hovels, built of poles and mud, with thatched roofs and earth floors."

Among his comrades was Don Francisco Galup, "a young gentleman from Barcelona, who had been taken by the English with dry goods to the amount of 50,000 dollars. He and I were the only two who kept constantly on horseback, our motive being to visit every house within two miles of the road, to converse with the inhabitants and to get information relative to the country." If food was needed, the party selected a bullock from the nearest herd, killed it, took the choicest pieces, and left the rest to the fowls of the air. It was the custom of the region to provide thus for wayfarers.

On the third day of travel they reached the Portuguese frontier-post. "After passing this guard, we entered the Neutral Territory, having on the southeast the sea, and on the northwest a great fresh water lake called Merino. It is over one hundred miles in length, and from twelve to twenty in breadth, as perfect a plain as you can possibly conceive of." There he saw vast herds of wild horses; "the Portuguese say three or four millions. I think they exaggerate, but have no doubt of there being three or four hundred thousand. Here also are great numbers of deer and some few other wild animals."

At Santa Teresa, the Spanish frontier-post, he presented a letter of introduction (from whom?) "to the Comodant, and was rec'd and treated with all possible politeness and hospitality, not only by him, but by every family there."

After a stay of five or six days, he pushed on to Rocha and Maldonado, reaching Montevideo on the 10th of February. This second journey covered about two hundred miles, making nearly four hundred miles from Rio Grande do Sul. The country was generally hilly and rocky, and there were no enclosed lands. The people slaughtered their cattle for the hides and tallow only, leaving the beef for the birds of prey. Many farmers killed three thousand or four thousand beeves yearly; a few killed as high as five or six thousand. One old man told him that he had six thousand sheep, and that he never sheared above thirty or forty a year, because the wool was of mediocre quality and there was no market for it. The inhabitants seemed to him the laziest people in the world. With all their countless acres, they raised no vegetables. There were deer in thousands, but they ate no venison. They scarcely knew of butter, and were often without milk. Their constant fare was beef, beef, beef.

The aboriginal problem interested him. "In this country are a great many Indians, who live after the manner of the Spaniards, and are not to be known as a different people by anything except their color. They adhere to the Catholic religion and the government; have nothing of the savage about them; drink but very little spirits; live in fixed habitations; own cattle and cultivate lands; have a credit with their neighbors; are extremely punctual to their engagements; and as hospitable as any people I ever met. I could not but admire their civility to me; the good government of their families; their respect for religion and for their duty to others. Nor could I

help reflecting on the difference between these Indians and those of our own country. If the natives of South America are capable of being thus reduced to civilization, why not those of North America?"

At Montevideo there were twelve American merchantmen, and at Buenos Ayres twenty or more, all awaiting leave from the stupid, obstructive government to take in cargoes. Some of these victims of Spanish exclusiveness had been there four, six and eight months. Among them were large vessels, including the *Washington* of Philadelphia, a ship of over nine hundred tons. "Should they be obliged to return home in ballast," he remarks, "it will make it very bad for our merchants."

His plans for himself throw some light upon the seafaring and merchandising of the period.

"From Buenos Ayres I intend to go to Spain as mate of a ship, and from Spain home, the same. By the time I arrive in Spain I shall probably have a knowledge of the Sp^h language, which will not be a disadvantage to me. Without fail write to me on receiving this, directing to the American consul at Cadiz and Malaga, as I do not know what port I shall go to. . . . My whole time is employed in laying up some knowledge relative to commerce. Tell your friends to have their minds prepared to give me a ship of four hundred tons, completely equipped and furnished for a two years' voyage. Let my good mother know that I am well, and that I am not spending my time idly, but to a good purpose."

There were two letters from Montevideo, one dated the 10th and one the 12th, of March, 1802. Then follows a blank of some years in his correspondence.

It would appear, however, that he did not go to Spain, and that he promptly commenced business in Buenos Ayres as a commission merchant. To do this it was necessary to obtain a permit from the government. How? He was just learning Spanish; he could not have possessed much capital, if any; he had no friends except such as he had picked up; he was a foreigner and a heretic.

On the other hand, his commission as a regular army officer, though expired, would give him, in the eyes of the Spaniards, the position of a gentleman by birth and character. It is quite probable that he obtained sailing orders for some of the American vessels which were rotting their figureheads off in the river, and that, in return for this service, he received a commission in money and a promise of future business. At all events, he made friends; he secured his merchandising permit somehow; he built up a prosperous business within a few years; by 1809 he was in possession of a handsome fortune. Among his properties at this date was a *chacra*, or ranch, about seven miles up the river from Buenos Ayres, which, according to family tradition, contained over thirteen thousand acres. Obviously there was a degree of practical genius in this hitherto unlucky adventurer.

But he was still to be the sport of circumstances. Between 1802 and 1809 various disturbing changes passed over the political condition of the country. In 1806 Great Britain, then at war with France and Spain, undertook to seize the La Plata provinces. Admiral Popham and General Beresford, with a force of only five ships and sixteen hundred soldiers,

occupied Buenos Ayres without resistance on the 27th of June. Six weeks later they were driven out by the country people, organized and led by Santiago de Liniers, a Frenchman who had settled in the vicinity. In February of the next year, Auchmuty appeared and stormed Montevideo. Not long afterward other reinforcements arrived under Whitelock, who advanced upon Buenos Ayres with nearly eleven thousand men, but was so disastrously repulsed that he signed a convention evacuating the La Plata region.

Liniers was rewarded for his brilliant services by the vice-royalty. But his position was soon rendered difficult by the fact that Napoleon dropped his friendly policy toward the Spanish Bourbons, and attempted to secure the Iberian peninsula and its colonial domains for his brother Joseph. The La Platans revolted at the thought of being delivered over to an alien race. When Charles IV abdicated, they proclaimed Ferdinand VII, and expelled an imperial emissary from their country. Liniers, as being a Frenchman, was suspected of favoring Napoleon; and in vain did he publicly announce his adhesion to the succession of Ferdinand VII. The Montevideans distrusted him and established an independent government. Buenos Ayres rose also, and Liniers gained nothing by suppressing the insurrection and sending the leaders to Patagonia, the Botany Bay of Spanish America. The Supreme Junta at Seville, hearing of these disturbances, deprived him of the vice-royalty and confided it to a Spaniard named Cisneros, an official as destitute of ability as he was of money and troops.

Among the minor consequences of this appointment was the banishment of David C. De Forest. But there is no documentary evidence which distinctly reveals the reason why. Family tradition, speaking with the characteristic vagueness of all tradition, simply relates that some of his party were shot, and that he was given but a few hours to quit the country. Tradition also affirms that he had a partner in business, an Englishman; that he and this partner held, or professed to hold, opposite opinions in regard to governmental questions; and that when he fled, he secured his possessions by assigning them to the partner, who was presumably a Bourbonite. His own sole discoverable allusion to the affair states that his property "was in the hands of a political and revolutionary merchant, which caused its being considerably diminished and embarrassed."* Possibly the Englishman was too fervent on the Bourbon side, and got banished in his turn, with some additional reprimand in the way of confiscation.

De Forest's first asylum in his flight was Islitas, an amphibious hamlet on the Rio de la Plata, half way from Buenos Ayres to the sea. There he was sheltered by the parish priest until he could hail an outgoing American merchantman and obtain passage for home.

He was by no means completely impoverished. Circumstances indicate that there had been, previous to the exile, a transfer of property to the United States. He kept with him a South American servant, and he astonished Huntington with a carriage and pair. In 1811 (Oct. 6) he married Julia Wooster, of

* Letter to Israel Munson, of Boston, dated Nov. 18, 1815.

Huntington, then a blonde, sparkling girl of fifteen years and eight months, sister of the wife of his younger brother Ezra, and granddaughter of a cousin of General David Wooster.

Meantime South American politics had undergone a transformation which favored the return of the exile. Little by little the triumphant Bourbon party had become a more or less liberal party. The La Platans demanded free commerce with foreign nations; and Cisneros ungraciously conceded what he dared not refuse. Next they wanted a local Junta, or council; and this, too, the viceroy indignantly accorded. On the 25th of May, 1810, the Provisional Government of the Rio de la Plata was established; and events soon showed that this act was the beginning of a separation from the mother country; even yet the date is honored in Spanish America as we honor the Fourth of July. Cisneros perceived too late that Buenos Ayres was drifting towards open disloyalty; and, gathering such troops and munitions and treasures as were at hand, he retired to Montevideo.

Tidings of these favorable events reached David De Forest early in 1812. The Bourbonite fanaticism no longer ruled Buenos Ayres, and something of his wealth might be recovered by prompt action. Taking ship with his girlish bride (twenty years younger than himself) he set sail for the Rio de la Plata. But, as he approached his destination, he became anxious lest there might have been another revolution, and the Bourbons might be again in power. Instead of sailing directly up the river to the city, he decided to stop at Islitas and await further news. During the early evening, accompanied by his wife and servant,

he landed under the lee of a low headland in the supposed vicinity of the friendly village. The two men carried side arms, large Spanish cloaks, a bottle of brandy, and a lunch of ship's fare. They watched the vessel as she disappeared in the deepening gloom; then they set forth, through a wilderness of thickets, for Islitas. But the seeming headland proved to be an islet, separated from the mainland by a muddy lagoon.

A fire was built, a bed was made of the cloaks for Mrs. De Forest, and the two men watched till morning. Then the servant discovered a ford, waist-deep, and my uncle carried his wife over in his arms. And now they found themselves on another islet, divided by a narrow but deep current from the true shore of the river, if indeed they were not altogether out of their reckoning and wandering in a jungly archipelago.

The two men separated to seek a ford, leaving my aunt under shelter of a thicket. They were recalled by a shriek for help, and, trampling back in all haste, they found her staring in horror at an Indian, who was on his knees praying to her. The simple, devout creature had never before seen a golden haired woman with a skin like roseate snow; and, coming upon such a creature there, alone in an uninhabited wilderness, he had taken her for the Santissima Virgen. He was as frightened as she was, and he was praying for very life.

The man was a woodcutter, and he had his cart with him, and he knew of a ford. The travelers were bedraggled with mud, and my aunt had on her husband's top-boots, when they reached the hamlet.

The friendly priest seemed very nearly as bewildered by her blonde beauty as had been his swarthy parishioner.

"Ah, don David!" he said, "this is a sin! this is a sin, really! to drag an angel through our swamps."

Favorable news soon arrived from Buenos Ayres. A carriage and escort came also, and the De Forests journeyed onward to the city. The beneficent woodcutter never quite got over his impression that my aunt was a worshipful creature, bordering on the supernatural. Every year afterward he made a pilgrimage to Buenos Ayres, bringing some rustic gift and returning not empty handed.

The *chacra* was recovered, and some of the other assigned properties. But De Forest had scarcely reopened the commission business when he was again compelled to suspend it. In 1812 the United States became involved in the general European struggle. The ubiquitous navy of England drove American merchantmen from the ocean, and the diplomacy of England came near adding the Argentine provinces to the list of our foes. My uncle briefly states the effect of this crisis upon himself, in an epistle dated July 14th, 1814. "Soon after my arrival in Buenos Ayres, in 1812, the war took place between England and America, which induced me to retire to my country-house, about seven miles from the city, and pass in retirement the time which I could not employ in commerce."

During July, 1814, he returned to Buenos Ayres, and in September he resumed business. In a preparatory circular, addressed to various leading merchants of America and England (including Darling & De

Forest of New York, and Goodrich & De Forest of New Haven) he states that the government has given him one of three commissions for an auction establishment, with an allowance of two and one-half per cent. on sales. A later circular (Sept. 15), written both in English and Spanish, announces that his place of business is next door to the Assembly House, and that on the 24th he will offer there for sale the entire cargo of the Spanish ship *Cazadora*, consisting of two hundred pipes Catalonia wine and brandy, and certain packages of paper and woven goods. Obviously the *Cazadora* was a prize which had fallen to somebody's privateer.

In a circular of December 22d, 1814, he explains his commercial advantages. "I am backed by my intimate friend, Larrea, who is secretary of the Treasury, and has already given me a great deal of business in sales of government property. My standing and support are such that I shall be able to make prompt returns."

A circular of April 10th, 1815, gives further personal information. "Perhaps it may be proper for me to add that I am not indebted to any one in the world; that I have some capital, and the most particular friendship of the government of the country. Also, that there is not, as I believe, nor has there ever been, any American other than myself, established here as a commission merchant, who possessed any capital of his own."

These letters and circulars are in De Forest's own handwriting. His Spanish, as an expert informs me, is idiomatic, and more correct than the average of South American Spanish, even among people of

position. At one time, as appears from his correspondence with the city authorities, there was a proposition to banish him as a native of old Spain. His name did not conflict with such a supposition, for David Curtis De Forest becomes good Spanish when written David Cortez De Forest.

His first account book with the government opens Sept. 21, 1814, and closes April 8, 1815. During that period of six months and fifteen days the sales amounted to \$191,704. Meantime there were auctionings for individuals, and there were private sales, some abroad. In November, 1815, he writes to Stephen Twycross at the Cape of Good Hope, that he has shipped him a cargo of mules by the *Laura*, and that he wants on his own account "one or two kegs best table wine of the Cape, and a keg of Constantia."

In so busy a house there were of course assistants. One of the clerks bore the name of Xavier Rodriguez de Vida. Four others were members of an Irish family which had settled long before in old Spain. There was Patricio Lynch, cashier; Benito Lynch, at \$9 per month; Manuel Lynch at \$8; Felix Lynch at \$5. It is quite probable in view of the seeming meagreness of these salaries, that these young men boarded and lodged with their employer, after the custom of Spanish countries.

Some few years since an article in Harper's Monthly stated that Lynch and Zimmerman were the founders of the commission business in Buenos Ayres. I will proceed at once to nail this error to the counter of David C. De Forest's warehouse. It must be noted that he began business in that city as

early as 1802. Twelve years later, under date of November 2, 1814, his accounts show Patricio Lynch as cashier, turning over cash on hand, \$3,962. Under date of April 29, 1815, Patricio Lynch is recorded as head clerk with a share of the profits. In a letter of November 3, 1815, my uncle introduces "Mr. Lynch (Benito ?), who is now a member of my counting-room, and with whose brother (Patricio, no doubt) I am connected in business."

John C. Zimmerman's early history in Buenos Ayres is as follows: He made his advent there as supercargo of the schooner *Kemp*, from Baltimore, which arrived August 29, 1815, bringing military and naval stores to the amount of \$19,000.* He gave the sale of the cargo to D. C. De Forest, and was his guest during his entire stay in Buenos Ayres, as appears from a note by my uncle to Mrs. Zimmerman at New York, begging her to accept a dozen chin-chilla skins. On the 27th October, Zimmerman sailed for Bordeaux, with 5,000 hides, etc., etc., consigned to Morton & Russill, to whom he bore a letter from D. C. De Forest introducing "Mr. John C. Zimmerman, a young German gentleman of New York," who wishes to purchase silks and jewelry in France. So far as I can discover, it was not till the early months of 1817 that he returned to Buenos Ayres. The firm-name of "Patricio Lynch & Co." first appears in the De Forest papers, May 28, 1817, fifteen years after my uncle established the house. By October of the same year it had become "Lynch, Zimmerman & Co.," and there is reason to believe that the "Company" was David C. De Forest.

* The only schooner mentioned in the De Forest books; most vessels were brigs.

To return to the year 1814. The re-established commission business rapidly became a large one. Auctions were held twice every week, and lasted from one to three days each. The sales for September 21, 1814, amounted to \$14,128; for the 20th, 21st and 22d October, they were \$19,916; for the 16th and 17th December, \$22,227. But in time the auction sales fell off, and the private sales greatly increased. There were periods when De Forest disposed of five or six cargoes a month. Every two or three days, duties varying from \$1000 to \$8000 were paid into the government treasury. During Patricio Lynch's brief term as cashier the cash balances foot up \$169,351.

Of course some brute force was necessary to carry on such a business and the lavish housekeeping which accompanied it. Slavery was still extant, and "niggers" were purchased. In 1814 (July 14) De Forest receipted to George Watkins, Brookfield, Massachusetts (!) for \$260 and a "black boy called Matthew." In December of the same year he bought for \$180 "a mulatto boy named Lucio, sold by order of the Supreme Director, with all his defects, vices and infirmities." On the same day the *casa* (warehouse) bought, for \$120, "a one-eyed negro called Sebastiano, sold by order of the Supreme Government, with all his vices and infirmities."

The De Forest hospitality was that of a merchant prince. The household expenses, for a time at least, amounted to about \$7,000 per annum, a large sum in those days. The table (exults a family letter) was always set for twenty-four persons. Many a merchant captain, many a supercargo besides Zimmerman, ate, drank, smoked and slept in the great

mansion over the storerooms and counting room. Many a government dignitary climbed that friendly stairway when he felt a longing for Havana cigars, Rhenish wine, claret, and gin punches. It was open-house on a costly scale, but it secured business, private and national. Who would refuse a cargo to a commission merchant whose table could always furnish a spare seat, and whose sideboard never went dry?

The private accounts of the warehouse provoke thirst and appetite. De Forest bought Havana cigars in thousands, champagne and *vin de Grave* in cases, claret and Rhine wine in barrels, with cheeses, pickles and other foreign delicacies, and a suggestively large number of corkscrews. On the 14th October, 1816, he ordered a pipe of white wine at \$115, twenty cases of claret at \$70, and one thousand cigars at \$100. Patricio Lynch also favored cases and barrels of claret. A lady recorded as Dona Clara was a profuse purchaser, for instance, taking a pipe of gin at \$170. A certain "Dick" also bought gin by the pipe, and empty demijohns to drink it out of, as one imagines. Cloth for a suit cost De Forest \$10; a silk handkerchief (it must have been a big one), \$14; a dozen gloves, \$5. Articles sold were indigo, boxes of balsam, boxes of sugar, packages of tobacco, bars of copper, cochineal, etc., etc.

Occasionally the business went ill, chiefly as the result of political changes. A revolution which occurred in the spring of 1815 sent friend Larrea, the secretary of the Treasury, into confinement, followed by banishment. On the 7th August, De Forest writes to Thomas Wilson of London, "It is nearly four

months since Mr. Larrea's political fall. He is now in prison, loaded with irons; and when he will be set at liberty is very uncertain. He has several thousand pounds of my money in his hands, which probably I shall never recover."

From a later letter we learn that Larrea sailed for Bordeaux without settling the debt, but professing that he had \$80,000 in France, and would make all right. "I hope it may be so," writes my uncle. "He has not for twelve months paid me a shilling on account."

Nor can I find in the account books that the exile ever remitted a shilling thereafter.

The new government was at first unfriendly. It objected to De Forest's commission as too high, and put a guard over the public property stored in his warehouse. He employed a lawyer named Vincente Anastasio Echevarria, sending him a retainer of twelve "ounces," equivalent to \$204. There was a long correspondence, as to what the commission had been legally, and as to what it should be; but in the end the authorities and the Connecticut merchant adventurer were on better terms than ever.

About this time a notable American name appears in "Don" De Forest's books. Writing, August 7th, 1815, to John Jacob Astor, he tells him that nutria skins, though scarce, can be had for \$1.75 per dozen, informs him what goods are most desired in La Plata, and counsels him to open a trade between Buenos Ayres and Calcutta. Three weeks later, he offers a \$5,000 draft of Astor's to a Mr. Boyhan, advising him "to make the necessary enquiries about the standing of Mr. Astor," a bit of counsel which sounds oddly now. Still later he writes Astor that he cannot dis-

pose of the draft, as no one is remitting to the United States.

Other dealings with the New York millionaire followed. Already, as appears from the correspondence, Buenos Ayres had sent out a privateer or two against Spanish commerce. But in the autumn of 1815 it decided to push this method of hostilities vigorously, and to make David C. De Forest its agent for distributing letters of marque in the United States. On the 20th September, he sent a circular on this subject to the following eminent American merchants and shippers, John Jacob Astor, George Crowningshield of Salem, Thomas Tennant of Baltimore, D'Arcy and Didier of Baltimore. The Buenos Ayrean government, he states, had conceded to him four letters of marque to cruise against the commerce of Spain. "As a citizen of Buenos Ayres I lend my name to the owner of these privateers, and shall expect my reward in a commission of ten per cent. on sales of prizes." Instructions follow concerning the laws and regulations under which the vessels must act.

The replies were prompt and favorable. Tennant agreed to fit out the *Potosi*; Astor, the *Criolla di Buenos Ayres*; D'Arcy and Didier, the *Congreso*; Crowningshield, the *Tucuman*. It must be noted that privateering was not a sin in those days, and that, even had it been so, De Forest sinned in good company. During the war of 1812 we Americans had sent forth hundreds of sea rovers against British commerce. Astor and William Gray of Boston had striven for superiority in the number of their fleets, with the result (as I have been told) that the former eventually took the lead, much to the public admiration. De Forest

looked upon his privateering as fair war ; he called it "making a dash at the Dons."

The *Congreso* eventually brought in rich prizes. The *Tucuman*, *Buenos Ayres* and *Potosí* do not appear again in De Forest's books, although the two first named are mentioned three years later in his consular correspondence.

Other letters of marque were given to De Forest for distribution. In a letter dated October 30, 1815, he forwards to captain Marcena Munson of New Haven* "a copy of my contract with the government for the two privateers, the *Tupacamaro* and the *Mangoré*." Also he encloses commissions for the captains, and promises that he "will consult the Supreme Director this evening about commissions for the lieutenants."

Munson got the *Tupacamaro*, and captain John Chase of Baltimore the *Mangoré*. The outfitting of still another cruiser has been attributed to my uncle, in the July number of the *American Review* for 1847. Joseph P. Sheffield, the founder of the Yale Scientific Department, furnished an article commemorative of his brother, T. T. Sheffield, a valiant fighter in our navy of 1812, stating that "through the influence and liberality of David C. De Forest, a beautiful New York clipper brig was bought by the Buenos Ayrean government and put into commission under the name *Chacabuco*." Perhaps this is the vessel alluded to in one of De Forest's letters, where he orders "a fast sailing brig for privateering purposes."

Voyages were leisurely in those times, whether one traded or privateered. It was not till November,

* Probably of Hotchkissstown, now the suburb of Westville.

1816, that the *Congreso* returned to Buenos Ayres from her first cruise, followed in December by the *Tupacamaro*. Both captain Almeida* and captain Marcena Munson brought fortunes with them. The names of some of the prizes were the *Leona*, the *San Andres*, the *Atravida*, the *Carlota*, the *Ciencia*, the *Sereno* and the *Triton*. The total value appears to have been not far from fourteen hundred thousand dollars. The *Triton*, a treasure ship, produced a *profit* of \$640,000, after deducting \$83,790 for duties and other local charges. The *Sereno*, laden with sugar and silver bars, was worth not less than half a million.

On the *Triton* captain Munson's personal gains were as follows:—commission as commander, five per cent., \$36,177; twenty shares prize money, \$12,950; other pickings, \$5,817; total, \$54,944. Francis Bulkley, apparently first lieutenant, got prize money, \$7,122. Each common sailor had a prize ticket for \$647, besides his wages of one dollar a day. Captain Almeida got his five per cent. as commander, besides twelve shares of prize money, and a payment of \$697 for his "black boy Dan," amounting in all to \$19,506. Each of his sailors drew a prize ticket of \$465, in addition to wages.

At this period the transactions of the De Forest counting house become so complicated that I fail to thoroughly comprehend them. Patricio Lynch, lately head clerk and junior partner, turns into "Patricio Lynch & Co.," and then into "Lynch, Zimmerman and Co." One Edmund C. Ayers becomes erelong William P. Ford, agent for the owners of the "pri-

* Almeida was a native of the Azores, born a Portuguese subject. John Q. Adams' Diary.

vate armed brig" *Tupacamaro*, who receipts to David C. De Forest, between May 7th and August 9th, 1817, for sums amounting to \$210,000. There is a John Gooding of Baltimore, representing the owners of the *Congreso*, who apparently secures whatever is due him, though the exact amount is indecipherable to me. There is a Don Carlos Cortez de Guemes who proves to be David Curtis De Forest. Also there is a Higinbotham who lays claim to \$17,000, on grounds not now distinctly apparent.

Patricio Lynch & Co. receipt for \$72,000, which is their third of a certain dividend. Subsequently, in February, 1818, Lynch, Zimmerman & Co. get \$60,000, and more later. During 1818 W^m P. Ford (agent for Tupacamaro owners) receipts for \$64,509, making a total paid him of \$304,189. Of all these moneys how much fell to Don Carlos Cortez de Guemes? After much poring over this privateering riddle, I must admit that I cannot divine it with certainty.

Here and there the "house" is credited with two-fifths of the profit on certain prizes; but presently it appears that a large portion of this allotment belongs to the branch houses, and to individuals. The mystery is partly explained by a settlement dated February 25, 1818, and signed by D. C. De Forest and Patricio Lynch. The total business, since the beginning of the new arrangement, amounted to \$423,697, and the profits to \$216,537. Of this last sum Lynch personally got \$54,199; Lynch, Zimmerman & Company, \$60,385; De Forest, \$101,952.* Who had the rest of the enormous gains of the privateering venture? The good people in New England and Mary-

* I omit fractions of dollars.

land who bought and fitted out the *Tupacamaro* and the *Congreso*.

The final reward of Don David's risks and labors seems unduly small. Sir Francis Drake did a better business in his little and lonely vessel. But in his time Spanish platers were more abundant and carried richer cargoes.

De Forest now deemed himself rich enough to return home and educate his young ones in America. In the spring of 1817 his wife and children and servants were put on board the brig *Aurora*, captain Searl, bound for New Haven. The passage money was four hundred dollars, and one doubts if the fare was worth it, unless the Don himself were the provider.

Mrs. De Forest had had an adventure in going out, and she had one in returning. On the 28th May a strange craft, showing an armament and the Spanish flag, sighted the brig and signalled her to heave to. Captain Searl advised Mrs. De Forest to counterfeit ignorance of the Spanish language. The commandant of the privateer came on board the *Aurora*, and, after some little prelude of maritime gossip, demanded specie.

"No specie in the ship," affirmed Searl. "I am taking home the family of an American merchant, but they have nothing but bills of exchange, which you couldn't use."

The Spaniard admitted that, but he was still inquisitive. He poked his swarthy face into the cabin, lifted his cap to the handsome young woman there, and spoke to her. She shook her head and made no reply; but her children, the eldest five years old,

began prattling to her in Spanish. The captain laughed at this, and then she answered him. There was an amicable luncheon on deck of hard biscuit, dried fruits and wine. The sea rover, learning that it was Mrs. De Forest's birthday, drank her health. Then, suavely taking possession of a box of elegantly bound Spanish books, he begged pardon for the trouble he had given, and departed to his own vessel.

Mr. De Forest remained at Buenos Ayres till the end of winter, sending home bills of exchange and cargoes of hides, and otherwise closing up his affairs. As near as I can make out (I am no accountant) he was worth at this time about \$150,000. One marvels that it was not more, for he had made money in various ways. There had been profitable purchasing of prize tickets, and very profitable speculations in sugar. But on the other hand there had been profuse outlays and severe losses. A branch house at Valparaiso had been abandoned because it cost more than it brought in. The banishment of 1809, and the downfall of secretary Larrea, had each swept away thousands of pounds sterling. Moreover, the Don had farced generously, and he had given abundantly. All his life he was extravagant in largess, whether to friends and relatives, or to the poverty stricken.

Considerable sums passed out of his hands during the final months of his stay in South America. His wife's diary complains that all the furniture, even to her beloved old piano, was presented to the Zimmermans. He manumitted his many slaves, and gave to each a little sum to begin life with. The *chacra*, valued at \$20,000, was donated to the government of the republic. A considerable capital remained in-

vested in Buenos Ayres, and, so far as I can discover, it remained there forever, uncollectable. It is doubtful if he reached home with more than \$110,000.

In return for his losses there were honors. The Director, General Puyrredon, accredited him to the United States as consul general, with the duties of *chargé d'affaires*. In the first week of May, 1818, he was in Washington, soliciting president Monroe and secretary of state John Quincy Adams for an official reception, with a view to securing a recognition of Spanish American independence.

CHAPTER X.

DAVID C. DE FOREST (continued).

The Spanish-American question was no novelty to our government in 1818. John Q. Adams and Henry Clay had been at loggerheads over it ever since the former became secretary of state in the autumn of 1817.*

No two men could be more unlike each other, and more sure to do each other injustice, than this typical Kentuckian and this typical New England Puritan. Clay was fervid, sympathetic, passionately right or passionately wrong, a duelist, a gambler, a racer of horses, a bibber of wine, a swearer of round oaths and as immoral as a Greek god, all this naturally, joyously, without shame and without hypocrisy. Adams was cold in temperament, colder in manners, systematic in his habits, straightlaced in life, and so devout that his Diary occasionally reminds one of the pious journals of Jonathan Edwards or Henry Martyn. They could not possibly approve of each other, or believe in each other, or bear with each other.

On the Spanish-American question they took sides promptly and with sentiments akin to anger. Clay demanded instant recognition of the men who were fighting heroically for their liberty against a stupid and cruel despotism. Adams wanted to wait until

* For the following account of De Forest's negotiations at Washington, I rely chiefly upon Adams' Diary, in vol. IV of his collected Works.

England would join us in countenancing the insurgents, and until we had induced Spain to sell us Florida. Clay held that Florida was sure to fall to us, and that we need not pay out money for it. Adams had visions of foreign fleets seizing Pensacola and establishing a hostile power in the peninsula. Clay declared that Adams' policy was dictated by Lord Castlereigh. Adams believed that Clay was pushing recognition to secure a nomination for the next presidency, and to eclipse the glory and impede the chances of a certain Secretary of State.

As early as September, 1817, Crawford had told Adams that Clay intended to bring in a motion to acknowledge the independence of South America. During the winter Adams granted repeated interviews to Aguirre (the then agent of the Buenos Ayrean government) without giving him any hope of early recognition. Halsey, our consul at Buenos Ayres, was dismissed for sending blank privateering commissions to American merchants; and Worthington, our general agent to the La Plata region, was recalled for negotiating a treaty with Director Puyredon. Apparently the waiting policy of our cautious and able secretary of state was firmly established and sure to triumph.

On the 24th of March, 1818, Clay moved an appropriation of \$18,000 as an outfit and one year's salary for a minister to the government of Rio de la Plata. He supported the motion in a fine speech, careless in diction, but generous in sentiment, persuasive, rational and effective. He was beaten by one hundred and fifteen votes to forty-five, but he was not surprised nor discouraged, for he had made up his mind to a

long warfare, and one lost battle could not defeat him.

It was under these apparently adverse circumstances that the new envoy from Buenos Ayres, David De Forest, arrived in Washington. On the 7th of May, 1818, he was admitted by the secretary of state to an informal interview. "I told him," writes Adams in his diary, "that he could not be recognized in the character of consul-general, as that would import a recognition of the government of Buenos Ayres; but if he should have any communications to make at the department of state, they would be received with the same attention as if he were acknowledged; and I added that the supposed treaty which Mr. Worthington had assumed to make, was without any authority, and had not been approved by the President."

De Forest admitted that he attached little importance to the Worthington treaty. As to his own appointment, it was given him unasked, and was of slight consequence to him personally; he was by birth a citizen of the United States, and had returned here with a view to permanent residence. But there were complaints that certain Buenos Ayrean privateers had committed irregularities; and this news had extremely annoyed and mortified the Supreme Director, General Puyrredon. Hence he, De Forest, had been accredited as consul-general to the United States government, with a hope that, if he were formally received and authorized to act, he would be able to suppress and prevent the said illegal procedures. Consequently he desired to exhibit his commission, and also to make written application for an exequatur, with a view to obtaining a written reply.

Adams declined to receive the commission, and proposed that intercourse should be verbal. De Forest then enquired whether he might call on the President. To this request Adams saw no objection and promised to mention it to the President favorably. De Forest was received by Mr. Monroe, not as consul general from Buenos Ayres, but as an American. There was a conversation on political affairs, but we have no record as to the nature of it.

During the autumn of 1818, news favorable to the Spanish-American insurgents reached the United States. De Forest believed that the final success of the patriots was now assured, and that he might properly renew his request for recognition. About the 10th of November,* taking his young and handsome wife with him, he left New Haven on the long, wearisome journey to Washington, intending to remain there through the winter. No political move was attempted until the arrival of further tidings from South America.

But on the 9th of December he wrote to Adams, requesting an official reception. Circumstances, he alleged, had materially altered since his application in May last; information had been received which established the fact that the United Provinces were truly independent. Moreover, there was a case now before the American courts which required supervision by a representative of his government. "Our armed vessels, the Buenos Ayres and Tucuman,"†

* He left New York on the 13th. Letter of John H. De Forest to Lynch, Zimmerman & Co. of Buenos Ayres.

† The *Tucuman* was Crowningshield's privateer. The *Buenos Ayres* may have been the *Criolla di Buenos Ayres* of Astor.

had captured a Spanish schooner; and the prize crew, having mutinied and murdered their officers, had brought the vessel into Scituate. Obviously his "absent fellow citizens" needed an authorized agent to defend their interests.

On the 12th December he again wrote the secretary to inform him that a conspiracy against Puyrredon had miscarried, and that the government of the Provinces was more firmly established than ever.

Adams now had a consultation with Monroe on South American affairs; then, on the 14th of December, he held a long conference with De Forest. The President (he stated) thinks that the favorable time for recognition has not yet come; this government aims at securing for Spanish America a simultaneous recognition by all the great powers; when the proper moment arrives, recognition shall not be withheld.

"Mr. Secretary," replied De Forest, "I am a merchant, and not a negotiator. Will it help matters forward if a diplomat takes my place? Shall I recommend General Puyrredon to send you a minister?"

Not yet, decided Adams. It would be impossible as yet to receive him. As to the schooner at Scituate, an accredited agent from Buenos Ayres could do nothing; the case must be decided by our courts according to our existing laws.

There was then some conversation as to commercial favors in return for political recognition. Adams declared that the United States government must not be understood as demanding a "favored nation clause." Its recognition would be given, not bought.

De Forest requested a written answer to his notes, and the secretary promised him a general one.

"Would there be any impropriety in my attending the President's drawing-room reception?" was the Don's final query.

Adams thought not, but he would speak to the President on the subject, and forward his answer to Mr. De Forest.

Apparently the Don made a favorable impression at the presidential drawing-room. A few days later, Monroe astonished Adams by directing him to write to Mr. De Forest that he intended before long to recognize the independence of Buenos Ayres. The astute secretary promptly invented a plan for inducing the President to reconsider and alter a decision which would probably upset his own favorite negotiation for the purchase of Florida. He drafted a letter to Mr. Rush, our minister at London, informing him that our executive had decided to recognize the independence of Buenos Ayres, and instructing him to convey the information to the British premier, Lord Castlereigh.

Monroe was startled when the letter was read to him. It was too positive, he decided; there had better be a cabinet meeting. So the cabinet held a long discussion over the question of recognizing the consul general from Buenos Ayres. The President did not want to give up his purpose at once; but he proposed to change the word "intention" into "it is contemplated." Adams judiciously said little in favor of his own policy. Calhoun emphatically recommended waiting until England should be ready to act with us. Crawford enquired if "this man De Forest were not an American citizen."

"He is," Adams replied. "Still, as we receive our citizens as consuls from other powers, no objection can be offered on that score to our receiving him. But he has made his fortune by privateering under the Buenos Ayrean flag, and is now here giving out commissions to privateers, although we have no direct proof of the fact."

No indeed, Mr. Secretary! Nor is there any proof of it in the Don's surviving letters and business books.

In the end Adams' waiting policy prevailed. The Cabinet agreed that no determination should be taken with regard to receiving De Forest officially, and that the letter to Rush should be so revised as to avoid declaring a fixed intention to recognize the South American governments.

It must be understood that Adams was not an enemy of the Spanish American patriots. He simply thought that their affairs could wait, and ought to wait, until King Ferdinand had placed us in possession of Florida. At the same time he did not mean to pledge himself to Spain any more than to the insurgents. This last fact appeared distinctly in an interview which he held with the French minister, Baron Hyde de Neuville, on the morning after the cabinet session just described. Neuville called to see the Secretary on behalf of Don Onis, the Spanish envoy.

"Suppose Spain," he queried, "should come to terms with you about Florida, would you agree not to force things in South America by premature recognition?"

"I decline to give any such guarantee," replied Adams. "We can not admit any connection between

recognition and our griefs against Spain for spoliation of our citizens."

The Frenchman then told him that Mr. De Forest had called on him, and that Mrs. De Forest had called on Madame de Neuville. "I do not know the object of these visits," he added. "They must be aware that we cannot return them."

"There is no occasion for it," advised Adams, perhaps a little alarmed as he remembered the Don's genial address and his wife's youthful fascinations. "Mr. De Forest," he continued, "has been received by the President, but only as an American citizen, not as consul general."

A few weeks later Adams met the Don at the President's drawing-room, and held a friendly chat with him. "De Forest told me," he writes, "that C. F. Mercer had broken out in the House to-day against my letter to Erving."

One queries whether the Don were not secretly pleased to give the obstructive secretary this irritating scrap of news.

But there was worse to come than Mercer's attack upon Adams' defense of Jackson's violent proceedings in Florida. On the 14th of January, 1819, the House passed a resolution requesting information as to whether any independent government in South America had asked for the recognition of a minister or consul general, and what reply had been made. "I suppose," writes Adams, "that the object is to worry the President, and especially the secretary of state, with the great South American witchery."

The resolution was not moved by Clay, but by Johnson of Virginia. "An honest man," explained

Monroe to Adams, "but weak and harsh-tempered, just suited to be put forward by others behind the scene."

Naturally the secretary believed that the fellows behind the scene were Clay and Crawford; they were always at work to break down his influence and his chances of future success. "Clay assaults me," he wrote, "both in his public speeches and by secret machinations, without scruple or delicacy." Or again, "Clay is as rancorously philanthropic as was John Randolph."

It is evident, from various passages in Adams' Diary, that he was often jaded and fretful with overwork. At one time he complains of his inflamed eyes; at another he has nearly lost the use of his writing hand. No wonder that he frequently set down the events of the day in a spirit of uncharity and suspicion.

On the 20th of January he began a report in response to the demand of the House for information. "The papers require a commentary," he judges. "In this affair everything is insidious and factious. The call is made for the purpose of baiting the administration, and especially of fastening upon the secretary of state the odium of refusing to receive South American ministers and consuls general. De Forest's notes are cunning and deceptive. To the last and longest of them I have not replied. It must be sent in under the call, and, if unaccompanied by a refutation, advantage will be taken to censure the course of the executive, and perhaps even to force a recognition of Southern independence."

On this same 20th of January, De Forest made a call on Adams, explaining that he was about to leave for New York. We need not wonder that the hunted and embittered secretary received him in a school-masterly humor. He reminded the Don that he had verbally claimed American citizenship, while in his late written communications he spoke of himself as a Buenos Ayrean.

"Will you oblige me, Mr. Secretary," replied De Forest, "by deciding whether I am a citizen here, or a citizen there?"

Adams declined to commit himself to an answer; he advised his visitor to consult a lawyer. But one thing was certain, and there need be no hesitation in saying it; an exequatur as consul from Buenos Ayres would not shield him from responsibility as an American.

The Don, as Adams thought, looked troubled. But he did not attempt to conceal his connection with the issue of letters of marque. For the last seventeen years, he stated, his chief residence had been Buenos Ayres, and he had formally accepted citizenship of that republic. In the struggle with Spain he had taken a very decided and active part, especially in the way of privateering. Now he had returned to his native country, and was building a house at New Haven, intending to reside there permanently. But if Spanish subjects could pursue him here for what he did while a citizen of Buenos Ayres, his situation would be perilous.

Then the conversation turned upon the call of the House for the correspondence. "It was made without my urgency, or even my knowledge," explained

the Don. "It is true that I have had conversations (not important) with Mr. Clay. When I came to this country I brought a letter of introduction to him from your commissioner, Mr. Graham. As to his urging our cause with such fervor last winter, I judge now that it did us more harm than good. I have the highest confidence in the kindly intentions of the President."

And here, hoping probably that he had soothed the irritable secretary, the representative of Buenos Ayres took his leave.

On the 29th January (1819) the President transmitted to the House six documents concerning the United Provinces of La Plata. There was a commission as consul general from Puyrredon to Mr. De Forest, followed by three official letters from the latter, and two replies by Adams. Also there was a long introduction by Adams, and, one day later, a long adverse report.*

The correspondence is too voluminous for insertion here. There were arguments; there was not a little dodging of arguments; there were sidelong polite digs and recriminations. Mr. Adams twitted Mr. De Forest with the irregular outfittings and violent proceedings of certain Buenos Ayrean privateers. Mr. De Forest responded that all that was just what he had come to regulate, if the United States would concede him authority to act officially. Apparently the secretary would have been pleased to have the Provinces offer him a "favored nation clause" without waiting for him to suggest it. At the same time he

* Official documents in the National Intelligencer, Feb. 6, 1819.

was determined not to run any risk of breaking with Spain until the Florida purchase had been completed. On the whole, he had gained one advantage over the consul; he had twisted the correspondence into a controversy.

But he had not seen the last of David C. De Forest. In the autumn the Don was once more in Washington, advancing his unwelcome pretensions to recognition. A letter of December 30 (1819), to his youthful daughter Pastora, briefly mentions a drawing-room reception at the presidential residence. He was proud to believe that his wife was the most elegantly dressed woman there. People had admired mamma so much that papa was afraid he should lose her. He had heard her called the Buenos Ayrean beauty. "May you excel your mother in everything, my little Darling."

But the Don's suit for recognition was not gaining ground with the changeable President and the stubborn, fretful secretary of state. Monroe was fearful, as he confided to Adams, lest Clay meant to reopen the South American question. Some of those agents, he went on to complain, especially Pazos, Clemente and Aguirre, had been Clay's tools in attacking the administration; he had suspected it last winter, and lately he had received positive information of it; in fact, it was the Columbian agent Torres who had told him so. Now, Torres was acting on entirely different principles; his instructions were to press nothing on this government contrary to its wishes or policy; and he had given his word that he proposed to abide by them.

Such a credulous president needed warning, and Adams took the business in hand at once. "Mr.

Torres makes the same professions to me," he said. "But so did De Forest last winter; and yet he has been one of the most troublesome of the South American agents."

Yes, Mr. Secretary; and why not, Mr. Secretary? Haven't you been troublesome to Don Onis and King Ferdinand on the subject of ceding Florida to Brother Jonathan?

In fact, during this year 1819, Adams coaxed or bullied a treaty out of minister Onis, giving Florida to us on condition that we paid the claims of our citizens against Spain. Ferdinand VII, with characteristic Bourbon obstinacy, refused to sign it. The President and Secretary of State were unspeakably mortified, disgusted and angered. Clay seized the opportunity to call upon the House to adopt his frank and energetic policy concerning Spanish affairs. On the 10th of May, 1820, by a vote of eighty to seventy-five, he carried a resolution declaring it expedient to provide funds for fitting out and salarizing such ministers as the President should see fit to appoint to any independent government in South America. It was his first victory on this question, and it precluded a complete triumph.

The controversy concerning the Buenos Ayrean consulate now went to sleep for a year. Then the Don made an effort, in his hospitable, spendthrift way, to awaken it and "keep it before the people." On the 25th of May, 1821, he invited the editor of the *Columbian Register* and many other notable New Haveners to join him in celebrating the anniversary of La Platan independence. National salute at day-break; at eleven, large concourse of gentlemen in

Butler's *County Hotel*; adjournment to the State House, where Ralph Lockwood, esquire (a De Forest relative) delivered an address; then back to Butler's for refreshments and toasts. Rounds of glasses were drained to "the day we celebrate," to "South America," to "the city of Buenos Ayres," to "the President of the United States," to "the memory of Washington," etc., etc. Meantime, and again at sunset, the guns repeated the national salute. "Soon after 8 P. M. a very numerous company of ladies and gentlemen convened at the elegant mansion of Don David C. De Forest, and passed the evening in great hilarity."

Another guest, the editor of the *Connecticut Herald*, styles the entertainer Don David Cortez De Forest, probably copying the official address on the letters which the consul received from the government of La Plata.

"It is believed," he declares, "that not less than four hundred persons partook of the plentiful and elegant repast at the County Hotel. A feeling of enthusiasm in the cause of freedom seemed to pervade all ranks, and the roots of the tree of liberty were watered (?) by many a copious libation, while the roaring of the cannon and the loud cheering of the toasts made the welkin ring. At eight o'clock P. M. a large party of Ladies and Gentlemen of the city and adjacent towns, with several of the Clergy and Strangers of distinction, visited the Consul General and his Lady at their house, where they were hospitably and most magnificently entertained."

We must return to the Florida question. It was eventually referred to the Spanish Cortes, and that body passed the Onis treaty of cession over the royal veto. The United States Senate approved it, and on

the 22nd of February, 1822, Monroe published it, thus celebrating Washington's birthday.

There was no longer any political reason for temporizing with feeble old Spain. Secretary Adams was now as enthusiastic as anybody else in the cause of the struggling Buenos Ayreans, Chilians and Bolivians. On the 8th of March, Monroe sent a special message to Congress recommending recognition of the South American republics; and on the 4th of May both houses, by an almost unanimous vote, passed an appropriation for the establishment of the necessary embassies. This action was simply a ratification of Clay's resolution of May 10th, 1820. It should be noted here that English recognition of the Spanish American states did not follow until 1825, after the last Spanish army in the New World had been annihilated at the battle of Ayacucho.

Adams' diary gives us a glimpse of consul De Forest's final appearance in this South American business. It appears that, after recognition had been decided upon, the Don advanced two "pretensions." He demanded that Buenos Ayres should be recognized before any other of her sister republics, and that he should be received at Washington as consul general and chargé d'affaires. There was a cabinet discussion concerning these claims, on the 19th of April, 1822. As to the demand in favor of priority for Buenos Ayres, "it was agreed," says Adams, "that it could not be admitted"; also that De Forest "could not be received as consul till he should obtain a new commission"; nor, being an American citizen, could he be received at all as chargé, or in any other strictly diplomatic capacity.*

* See Adams' Works, vol. V.

All the same, the Don felt that he had won a victory, and his heart was in a mood for rejoicing. On the 25th of May, 1822, he again celebrated the national anniversary of the Argentine provinces. The *Connecticut Journal* of the period furnishes us with an appetizing account of the revelry, under the heading *The Independence of Buenos Ayres*.

"On Friday evening of the past week the birthday of this Sister Republic was suitably commemorated in this city. A large number of the most respectable citizens of New Haven, and gentlemen of both branches of the Legislature, assembled by previous invitation at the elegant mansion of David C. De Forest, who was elected First Consul to the United States by the new government. After the usual congratulations the company partook of a sumptuous entertainment, and the evening passed with much mutual good feeling, and with the highest gratification which the occasion and the appropriate and elegant preparations could inspire.

"The following poem was written for the occasion, and read at the close of the entertainment with unmingled applause. We need not add that it is from the pen of the inimitable Percival :

"Hail to the land of the free and the bold,
Where honor and justice have planted their throne,
Where the hearts of the meanest can never be sold,
And order and liberty reign there alone.

"Hail to the souls that can never be slaves,
Who boast of the rights they have won by the sword,
Who fight for their forefathers' altars and graves
And soar, as the eagle who rescued them, soar'd."

There are six more stanzas as good as these, and no better. Obviously the Inimitable could not do himself justice in South American affairs. It must not be supposed that the bashful poet-geologist declaimed his own dactyls. If within the De Forest walls (which occasionally happened to him) he was probably in his usual hiding place, behind the first door.

His duty done to Buenos Ayres, De Forest resigned his consul-generalship, a purely honorary position in regard to emoluments, but abounding in expenses and worries. Somewhat later, as a scrap of letter informs me, he journeyed to Montreal to put his eldest daughter in a French school there, and thus was absent from home when his "elegant mansion" received its most illustrious visitor.

On the 21st of August, 1824, New Haven and neighboring Yankeedom welcomed LaFayette. Cannon and bells, of course; windows, doors and porticos decorated; fences, trees and roofs laden with spectators; spontaneous cheers from thousands of people; "such a shout was never heard here before." So dense was the crowd that certain pickpockets from New York made gains which ought to have consoled them for many an interview with the whipping-post. General Andrew Hull of Cheshire lost his pocket book, with \$300 and many valuable papers. Mr. Newton Rossiter of Torrington was robbed of \$100, besides notes, bills, receipts, etc. Wm. M. Osborn of Woodbridge missed \$17 in money, a town order on Derby for \$150, and notes to the amount of \$160. This while they were hurrahing for LaFayette, with three churches in full view, and the New Haven jail close behind.

The hero had a reception at the Court House; then a "breakfast with Governor Woolcott and all the authorities"; after that three hundred ladies with their children stormed the hotel and were presented. The courtly old nobleman was most gracious to them. How could he be otherwise? "He was surprised and delighted," says the Columbian Register, "with so much beauty and grace."

At twelve he went to the "Green," and reviewed the troops. A splendid array!—the Horse Guards, Major Huggins; the Foot Guards, Lieutenant Boardman; a squadron of cavalry, Adjutant Harrison; the Iron Greys, Lieutenant Nicoll; a battalion of infantry, Captain Bills; the Artillery, Lieutenant Redfield;—all under Major Granniss. The marquis had probably seen worse, as well as better. Hat in hand, braving the August sun in his auburn scratch, he dispensed his ready compliments. Fine appearance—exact discipline—correct movements—vast improvement since the old times. The militiamen must have come near weeping with joy and pride.

He stood in Mr. Smith's door (*which* Smith?) while the column marched past. After that he paid his respects to various widows and daughters of slain Revolutionary heroes.

Next "to the house of David C. De Forest, esquire, late consul general from Buenos Ayres and the provinces of the Rio de la Plata. Mr. De Forest being absent, he was received at the door by Mrs. De Forest, with her accustomed politeness. Here he remained several minutes, and partook of some refreshment.*

* Standing in front of the Don's portrait (in riding dress, painted by Morse) he drank his health. (Letter from an eyewitness.)

Although in New Haven more than four hours, he was standing all the while except at the breakfast and during his short visit here. No such splendid mansion, with its brilliant furniture, was here in 1778. From the portico in front he surveyed the beautiful Green, full of people, with the long line of troops, the buildings around, and the fine foliage of the trees. A lively sensibility at once appeared. He was struck with the beauty of the scene. Such another prospect can hardly be presented in America."

How did the hero look to Mrs. De Forest and the Addisonian editor?

"Although sixty-seven years of age, he has not the appearance of being much over fifty. He is about six feet high, has a vigorous frame, and tho' lame in the left knee, which he cannot bend, appears capable of hardship. He is thought by some to possess a German, or English, rather than a French physiognomy. His eye is lively and penetrating, and his countenance fully indicates his true character, great good sense and perfect good nature. With a rare simplicity of manners he puts everybody at ease around him. His dress was plain, a blue coat and nankeen pantaloons. His hair is said to have been sandy, but he now wears a scratch. While here he had little use for a hat, being covered scarcely a moment."

My handsome young aunt, sparkling and blushing like rosy snow there in the langsyne, must have leaned and gazed after him with throbbing interest as "Mr. Street's elegant barouche" bore him through double lines of hurrahing students to the College, resigned to shake hands with president and faculty, and praise Trumbull's Washington, after which must

come the burying-ground and the graves of Humphrey and other old comrades, so that he was probably dead weary when fifteen guns roared him out of town with their worshipping farewell.

La Fayette may have found something familiar, perhaps of the French order, in Mrs. De Forest. A mere girl when she left home, and having passed one quarter of her life (more than half of her grown-up life) in the Spanish-American provinces, she had not the manner of a New Englander. The people of grave New Haven were amazed, if not sorrowfully scandalized, at the three "courtesies" with which she entered a parlor. As for her early beauty, I get my idea of it from a portrait by Morse, afterwards famous as the founder of American electro-telegraphy.* Blonde—almost snowy blonde, but with roses in the cheeks—the features delicately Hellene—the hair of reddish gold—the eyes sparkling hazel.

D. C. De Forest's life in New Haven was conducted on a generous scale. He spent much, and he gave away much, more than he could afford. His money had come to him so easily, it had been such a mere amusement to win it, that he parted with it carelessly. He divided fifteen thousand dollars (a respectable fortune then) among his relatives. He offered his mother \$5,000 more, and when she refused it, he presented the check to Yale College for the benefit of

* Morse's New Haven studio was in Hillhouse Avenue, in a building which had been a barn. His sitter drove there in her yellow carriage, attired in the dress which had so gratified her husband's vanity about her, when she wore it to Monroe's drawing-room reception. The painting shows that Morse had artistic talent of no mean order.

the library. But the magnitude of the gift hurt the feelings (mere human courage dares not say the vanity) of one of the elder trustees, a locally illustrious gentleman who had just donated \$1,000 for the same purpose. Consequently secretary Goodrich and treasurer Hillhouse called upon Mr. De Forest, and requested him to withhold his check until the aforesaid dignitary could be reconciled to it. A year later, fearful of losing the money, they called again and suggested that it should be given in another way.

"Gentlemen," said the Don, "the trustees returned my check when I offered it. Now they want it for a purpose which fails to interest me. I will give it; but I will not give it outright to the college; I will give it for the benefit of my own flesh and blood."

Thereupon he proposed that the money should be held at interest until it amounted to \$26,000, when the income should be devoted to four scholarships for De Forests, and an annual gold medal, worth \$100, for superiority in English composition and declamation. The proposition was accepted, and the check was paid over on the 12th of September, 1823. A vigorous opposition was offered by the afore mentioned local grandee and one of his personal friends among the professors. "It is contrary to the spirit of our American institutions," declaimed the venerable worthy. "It is an attack upon republican equality. Here is a family which is to have special privileges; its young men are to be made literary aristocrats. As an American I protest against it."*

* These particulars were related to me by an elderly relative, now deceased, who was present when Hillhouse and Goodrich made their second call, and who heard the rest of the story from D. C. De Forest.

But he was voted down ; the De Forest scholarships (now three in number) have done good ; the De Forest medal is one of the chief prizes of the academic course of Yale.

The Don had his defects ; he was quick-tempered, arbitrary and haughty ; but he was generous, charitable and affectionate. No beggar entered his kitchen without obtaining a meal and a silver half dollar. Every February he sent fifty dollars to the almshouse in order that the inmates might celebrate Washington's birthday by having one good dinner and a glass of wine each. When Howe, the publisher and bookseller, failed, he attended the auction and bought everything that nobody else wanted, to give his unlucky friend a good closing out. His affection for his family, and for his brothers, was remarkable. He furnished the latter all the money they needed to establish and advance their business affairs.

Hearing that his brother Benjamin, in Watertown, was dangerously ill of typhoid fever, he ordered up his costly span of greys, took in Knight, the then famous doctor of New Haven, and set off for the invalid's residence. It was springtime, and the roads were horrible. But when the greys couldn't trot, they might run. In two hours he had covered the twenty-eight miles between New Haven and Watertown. Then, when the news met him at the door that his brother was still living, the big, swarthy, stern-eyed man tottered into the house, threw himself on a sofa and sobbed with joy.

A cloud from his South American days sobered the latter months of his life. The sailor of that age was still something of a buccaneer, especially when he

had a commission to range the sea for plunder. Notwithstanding the minute regulations which De Forest had distributed with his letters of marque, and notwithstanding that the crews and officers were largely "honest Yankees," there had been irregularities. One privateer, the . . . of Baltimore, had captured a Spaniard under illegal conditions. All the same, the Buenos Ayrean courts condemned the vessel, and the proceeds were distributed to the captors. The owners of the prize eventually brought suit for recovery and damages. The outfitters of the privateer evaded consequences by means of bankruptcy and emigration. Thereupon the suit was turned against David C. De Forest, on the ground that he had signed papers of guarantee, in which he was named as the Buenos Ayrean backer of the privateer. The Spanish minister at Washington did all in his power to forward the prosecution. The public was appealed to through forensic oratory and newspaper eloquence. The words piracy! pirate! were liberally used. Even yet D. C. De Forest bears a traditionary popular fame of having been a corsair.

He defended his case, sending for persons and papers in evidence, and believing that he should win. But one chilly, stormy evening of February, 1825, he felt ill. There was an invitation to a party; but he sent his wife, and remained at home. Towards eleven he became anxious about her, and went repeatedly to the door to watch for her return, breathing in the sour, sleet-laden blast of a stormy night. The next day he was a sick man, and on the 22d of February he died, aged fifty-one.

Some hours earlier, on that anniversary of Washington's birthday, the town paupers had had their annual dinner and glass of wine at his expense. Sam Mix, the veteran of the almshouse, rose in his place at the head of the table, and, after announcing to his humble comrades the dangerous illness of their benefactor, proposed the toast of "David De Forest, the poor man's friend." A few days later, these objects of charity drew up and forwarded to the widow their laboriously signed expression of sympathy for herself and her orphaned children.*

* "The funeral," writes an eye-witness, "was attended by a great concourse of people. There were so many country wagons hitched along the fences of the Green that one was reminded of the fourth of July."

The list of chattels in the Don's probate papers is interesting as showing the style of living of a prosperous retired merchant of the period. The house (appraised low, of course) was valued at \$20,000. The span of greys, which had cost \$500, went in at \$180. There was a coach, \$100; a dining table, \$100; wines, \$171; a piano, \$250; table silver, \$586. The library (aside from one which belonged to the wife) was that of a business man, its chief value lying in atlases, gazetteers, geographies, encyclopedias and other works of solid information, numbering in all one hundred and forty volumes.

CHAPTER XI.

OTHER CHILDREN OF BENJAMIN DE FOREST (2ND).

The history of John H. De Forest affords another instance of the tendency of New England yeomanry, during the early years of this century, toward commerce and general business.

Not long after the tragical close of his youthful merchandising he secured a clerkship in a shipping house in New Haven, and within six years accumulated twenty-seven hundred dollars, no contemptible sum in 1803.

He then formed a mercantile partnership with his brother Benjamin in Watertown, Connecticut. The pork and beef and grain of the neighboring farmers were shipped to New York by way of Derby, the Housatonic river and Long Island Sound. This interior town, twenty-eight miles from salt water, became a sort of seaport. There were ventures across the ocean, in which my father was the supercargo. Various New England productions were carried to the West Indies, France, Spain, Portugal and Morocco. One trip was to Tarragona for merino sheep, with an interlude of barilla bark to England. It is wonderful how many ways to employ their time and money were invented by these active minded brothers.

A final voyage from Boston to Bordeaux brought on a collision with England, which was then blockading France. One misty morning there was an unexpected hail from a British cruiser; then came a second hail which was not understood, and then a shot which killed the helmsman. The Yankee skipper jumped into his small boat, rowed up under the "haughty Briton's" quarter, and asked, "Why did you fire into us?"

"Why didn't you drop your mainsail?" was the answer. "We lost one of your Yankee schooners the other day. She hove to, but kept all sail up, and when she found out what we wanted, she luffed up into the wind's eye and ran straight away from us. So we ordered you to let go your mainsail."

The prize was sent to England, the cargo and vessel confiscated, and the people put into Dartmoor prison. My father was soon liberated on parole, and passed his abundant spare time in studying French, his teacher being a French prisoner of war. A letter which he wrote to the Admiralty eventually secured an order setting all hands at liberty; but the schooner and its quintals of salt codfish remained in the capacious pockets of John Bull. This misadventure, and the war of 1812 between England and the United States, put an end to my father's seafaring enterprises.

Meantime, on the 5th December, 1811, he had married Dotha Woodward, youngest daughter of Elija Woodward of Watertown, Connecticut, a colony of Watertown in Massachusetts, where there were once Woodwards by the score. Her eldest sister, Sarah, was the wife of Gerrit Smith, a wealthy Watertown

merchant, and brigadier general of the Litchfield county militia. Another sister, Minerva, married a son of Judge Adams, one of the professors of the then famous law-school of Litchfield.

In June, 1818, under advice of his brother David, my father settled in New York as a broker and commission merchant. One of his chief correspondents was the house of Lynch, Zimmerman & Co., of Buenos Ayres. Manuel Lynch, junior, was for a time his bookkeeper, not from necessity, but to perfect himself in English and the ways of American business. There were sales of Buenos Ayrean cargoes, such as cattle hides, horse hides, "horse-oil" and "ostrich feathers." Also there were shipments of lumber and other articles to the West Indies, to South America and to Europe. Patagonian ostrich feathers did not take well in France; three lots which my father sent thither netted him a loss of \$2,000.

At that time a disastrous business depression affected Europe and all the civilized regions of the American continent. Failures were numerous; our old acquaintance, Gooding of Baltimore, and D'Arcy and Didier of Baltimore, suspended payment; the vast gains of the privateer *Congreso* could not save them. In May, 1821, weary with struggling against the persistent panic, my father gave up the New York brokerage and commission business, content to pocket a loss of about one-tenth of his capital.

Now came a bolder experiment. He knew nothing of manufacturing, but he decided to become a manufacturer of cottons. In company with a Philadelphia firm he bought the water-privilege and woolen mill

which had been left unoccupied through the death of General David Humphrey, aid-de-camp to Washington, minister to Spain and Portugal, importer of merino sheep and founder of our woolen industry. There had been more honor than profit in the labors of the patriotic veteran at Humphreysville.*

My father promptly set the paper-mill, gristmill and sawmill agoing, while he altered the woolen mill into a mill for cotton sheetings. Henceforward his work was here, one of the minor founders of cotton manufactures in the United States, and not without pecuniary reward therefor, although he suffered heavily in the financial depression of 1837, and in general conducted his business without the encouragement of a protective tariff. He was repeatedly elected to the state legislature, and was for years the principal trying justice of the district. His death occurred on the 12th of February, 1839.

His brother Benjamin died at Watertown, March 23rd, 1848, leaving a considerable fortune, and a noble reputation for liberality to religious objects, especially to the American Board of Foreign Missions. His eldest son, John De Forest, a graduate of Yale, died there March 11, 1885, in possession of large wealth. He was followed on the 6th of June, 1888, by his only son and child, Erastus Lyman De Forest, also a graduate of Yale, and notable for ability in mathematics. Biographical notices of these two, with an account of their public beneficences, may be found in a lately published History of Waterbury.

* Name changed to Seymour by a Legislature which (as I suppose) had never heard of Humphrey, nor of Washington, nor of the Revolutionary War.

Ezra De Forest, the youngest brother of David C., held to the old yeomanry life of Connecticut, modest, gentle, devout, and an example of every kindly virtue until his decease at Huntington on the 6th of February, 1868. He was born during the closing agonies of the Revolutionary war, and lived to witness the closing agonies of the war of the Rebellion.

END OF HISTORY.

THE OLD-TIME VILLAGE.

Evening descends on the village,
The dew has jeweled the blooms,
The hawks are wheeling and darting,
The beetles whirr in the glooms.

Moonlight silvers the rapid,
The waterfall pours its drone,
The frogs hold revel in chorus,
The whippoorwill grieves alone.

A somnolent handful gathers
In the dusky schoolhouse for prayer ;
Beneath the sharp nose of the pastor
Two candles gutter and flare.

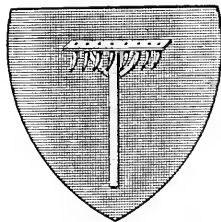
A russet-faced deacon rises
To speak—if ever he can.
He halts and mumbles : no matter :
God hears the honest wee man.

A ringleted maiden's treble
Bewitches the schoolboy's ear :—
Even yet, O dimpled Soprano,
Your anthem exults, and I hear !

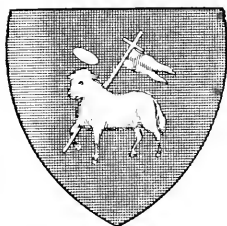
The village remains, and the river
Beams, and the roses blow ;
But the longsince dead are the only
Abiders there I know.

The living pass me in silence ;
Remembrance and welcome fail :
But the holy ones in the churchyard
Awaken to bid me, " Hail !"

APPENDIX



DE RESTEAU (of Hainaut).



DU FOSSET (of Mons).

APPENDIX.

PART I.

(Paragraph)
I. LIST OF THE OLDEST EXTANT
RECORDS OF AVESNES.

RECORDS AT PARIS.

Accounts of Gilles de Forest, receiver of taxes, from St. John Baptist's day, 1494 to the same date 1509: in an "Inventory of documents of the peerage of Avesnes in Haynaut": fol. 88o p.p. Archives Nationales; Bibl. Nat. Paris.

RECORDS AT AVESNES.

I. Orations dominicales; les proclamations de bans de mariage, les messes, etc; décembre 1529-1544; 22¹^{eme} dimanche après la trinité, 1578-juillet 1586; 1620; 1626.

II. Livre Rouge (comptes de la ville) depuis 1544.

III. Registre des embriefves passées pardevant provost et échevins de la terre et banlieue d'Avesnes, vol. I, 10 décembre 1561-12 octobre 1588.

IV. Le même titre, vol. II, 13 octobre 1588-7¹^{eme} mai 1605.

V. Registre d'embrefs des fiefs de la terre et pairie d'Avesnes, 1546-1589.

VI. Embrefs de mainferme dans les villages de la Terre d'Avesnes.

VII. Répertoire des fiefs.

The registers of baptism, marriage and decease begin 1619 ; the probate papers, 1654.

The Avesnes records at Lille, chief town of the Department, have thus far produced no information of value.

RECORDS OF AVESNES.

(Paragraph)

2. (The existence of Gilles de Forest, receiver from 1494 to 1509, is established by the Avesnes records at Paris. It is assumed, in lack of documentary proof, that he was father of Melchior 1st and grandfather of Melchior 2nd.)

Melchior de Forest 1st, 1530, Sunday, June 4th, mass for Melchioris de forest, chapel of St. John. Again in 1531 and later.

Marguerite de Forest, (daughter of Melchior 1st ?) ; 1530, Marriage between Margrite de forest of Avesnes and Jean le vecq (L'Eveque) of Marbay.

Melchior de Forest, 2nd, 1533, Sunday, April 4th, publication of bans of marriage between Melchior de Forest of Avesnes and Catherine du fosset of Mons. (Parents of Jean and grandparents of Jesse.)

1539, September, marriage between Jenne de forest of Avesnes and Nicolas thiebaut (Thiebaut) of Mons. (Supposed sister of Melchior 2nd.)

1563 and 1564, Melchior de Forest, alderman of Avesnes.

1569, Melchior de forest, residing at Guersignies, (his wife Catherine du fosset) purchases a land rent from Collart Grart (Gerard).

1571, March 17, Melchior de forest, a merchant residing in the city of Avesnes (his wife Catheline du fosset) purchases a rental from Gille de le plancq.

1572, January 28, Jehan Grart sells to Catherine du fosset, widow of Melchior de forest, for, in the name of, and to the profit of, Balthazar, anth,* Jean, Jacqueline and franchoise de forest, her children whom she had by the said Melchior de forest her husband, the sum of 80 livres rental, secured from new charges, upon the true exact half of . . . 16 razières of land taken upon 30 razières or thereabout lying and holding by the grove of . . . and $\frac{1}{2}$ a razière of meadow lying, etc., etc.

1579, 2nd Sunday after trinity, mass for Catherine du fosset, *in extremis*.

3. *Baltazar de Forest* (son of Melchior 2nd). 1570, Dec. 1, Estienne Marin makes showing that his son-in-law Balthazar de forest, residing in Avesnes, assigns, etc., etc., to the contract of marriage between Louys Marin and Franchoise Huberlant.

1571, June 8, Estienne Marin, provost of the peerage city of Avesnes, gives to Adrienne Marin, wife of Baltazart de forest residing in Avesnes, a *fief ample* holden of the city of Avesnes, comprehending three razières. †

1571, Nov. 7; 1574, Feb. 26; 1578, March 11, Balthazart de Forest alderman of Avesnes.

1577, March 15, Balthasar de Forest in right of Adrienne Marin his wife, Jean le vacq in right of Martenne Marin his wife, Nicolas Jacquier in right of Anthonette Marin his wife, Martin Canriot in right of Charlotte Marin his wife, and Guillemette Marin widow of Loys du Jonquois residing at Fourmies,

* Antoine.

† † A razière was something less than half an acre.

make showing that by the death of Estienne Marin their father and father in law, several portions, heritages and rentals have fallen to them lying within the jurisdiction of Avesnes, whereof they have made partition.

1577, July 13, Nicolas Jacquier, laborer, sells a rental to Balthasar de forest, draper residing at Avesnes.

1577, Aug. 17, Balthazar de Forest, merchant at Avesnes, sells etc., etc., etc., to Catherine de Fosset, his mother, widow of Melchior de Forest.

1582, Dec. 18, Balthasar de forest, burgher of Avesnes, hires for nine years from the city of Avesnes a heritage of two razières pertaining to Phles de Forest. (Philippus.)

1594, Aug. 4, Baltazar de forest, merchant residing at Avesnes, sells to Charlotte Marin, gentlewoman, (*demoiselle*), lately widow of Martin Canriot, a rental of 70 sols tournois secured upon eight razières of garden and pasture on the old road to Cartignies.

4. *Antoine de Forest*, (son of Melchior 2nd). Fiefholder *sur flumes* between 1566 and 1571, by record of Monseigneur de Noircarmes grand bailliy of Hainaut.*

Alderman of Avesnes in 1571. (City Records.)

Jaspard de Forest, (son of Melchior 2nd?) 1558-1559, canon of the cathedral chapter of St. Nicolas, Avesnes.

1579, 3rd Sunday septuages, solemn mass for the soul of Messire Jaspard de Forest; from the church. Again later.

Gilles de Forest, 2nd, (Son, or nephew, of Melchior 2nd?) 1558-1559, canon of the cathedral chapter of

* Archives de l'État, Mons, Belgique.

St. Nicolas, Avesnes; later, provost and dean of the chapter.

1595, Francois Drys, provost of the chapter of Avesnes, acknowledges receipt of certain properties from his predecessor, Gilles de forest. (Fiefs of the high provostship of the chapter of Avesnes.)

Melchior de Forest, 3rd (Son of Melchior 2nd?); 1582, second Sunday in lent, mass for Melchior de Forest and his wife Marie La Sur. Again later.

5. *Descendants of Baltazar de Forest.* In the *Répertoire des Fiefs*, concerning three razières of land at Wandreckyes, appear these receipts:

1617, Martin de Forest, from his mother Adrienne Marin; 1635, Jean de Forest, from his father Martin; 1685, other names in this line.

Ancestors of de Forest de Quartdeville?

6. *Simon de Forest*; 1565, Oct. 3, Simon de forest, draper residing at Avesnes, purchases a rental from Collart Housart; wife of purchaser Annes lepon (Le Pont).

1570, Aug. 12, Simon de forest, merchant in cloth residing at Avesnes, (his wife Agnes lepon) purchases a rental of Valentin Monot.

1585, April 6, Simon de Forest, merchant at Avesnes (his wife Agnes lepon) purchases a rental of 25 livres from Jean Laduen.

1585, Oct. 2, Simon de Forest, merchant draper at Avesnes (his wife Agnes lepon) purchases eight livres of rental (repurchaseable at 100 livres, 23 sols)

from Valentine Monot, his wife Jacqueline Ghobert,* having children; security, Phles Benoit.

1598, Dec. 16, Agnes le pon, widow of the late Simon de Forest, purchases a rental of * * * laborer.

7. *Philippe de Forest.* 1567, Nov. 15 Phles de Forest, merchant draper residing at Avesnes (his wife franchoise petit, gentlewoman) purchases of Claude N—— seven razières lying at the *bouloit*.

1569, Feb. 27, Jean le telier sells a rental to Phles de forest, merchant at Avesnes.

1570, July 15, Joechin le moisne sells a rental to Phles de forest, merchant draper at Avesnes.

1571, January, Phles de Forest merchant in cloth ("draper" scratched out) residing at Avesnes, hires a *muid*† of land near the Green Valley.

1572, Feb. 24, Claude Maestricke sells a rental to Phles de Forest, merchant residing at Avesnes.

1572, April 10, Phles de Forest, merchant draper at Avesnes, (his wife franchoise petit) buys four razières near the Hedge of Avesnes from Phles Moreau, archer (armed police).

1576, Dec. 5, Phles de Forest, merchant residing at Avesnes (his wife Franchoise Petit) buys a rental of Jacques Souply.

1577, April 18, Jacques and Jean Picunet, brothers, Jacques dwelling at Wandreckyes and Jean at Boloigne, and Phles de Forest merchant dwelling at Avesnes, make showing that they are heirs together of a heritage of five razières of land lying near the

* A Marie Gobert was the wife of Melchior de Forest 4th, brother of Jesse; see App. paragraph 16, date 1615, March 1.

† Six or eight acres.

Thieves' Fountain, concerning which heritage they have agreed loyally and without fraud in such sort that the said Phles de Forest shall, by virtue of purchase, possess, he and his heirs, two razières and a half.

1581, January 20, Jacques Neulieu sells to Phles de Forest, merchant residing at Avesnes, a razière of land lying near the *boulott* belonging to said purchaser.

1581, Dec. 30, Phles de Forest, merchant residing at Avesnes, makes showing that he has rented from monseigneur the duke of Arschot a *canée* of woodland containing three razières, lying beyond the Green Valley. (Described as "near Trelon," and as belonging to Philippe de Forest, in a "division by the heirs of Messire George de Blois"; Ms. fr. 31720, p. 141, Bibl. Nat. Paris)

1583. Phles de Forest jurat of Avesnes. (Records of Avesnes.)

1584, January 28, Phles de Forest, merchant at Avesnes (his wife Franchoise petit) buys of Remy Rousseau a little garden at the Green Valley.

1585, October 17, Phles de Forest, merchant draper residing at Avesnes (his wife Franchoise Petit gentlewoman) purchases of Jean Thielier land at the Green Valley held on two sides by the said Forest.

1586, May 19, Phles de Forest, merchant residing in the city of Avesnes (his wife Franchoise Pctit gentlewoman) buys of Remy Rousseau land at the Green Valley held on two sides by the said Forest.

1587, April 29. Phles de Forest buys of Remy Rousseau a garden plot at the Green Valley.

1589, April 29, Phles de Forest, residing at Avesnes (his wife Franchoise Petit gentlewoman) buys two

razières of land at the Green Valley from Etton du pont (Dupont).

1589, Dec. 5. Before provost Jacques francquart* and alderman Charles douvre, franchois Meurquin, michel Maur, and Jacques peloz, was sold by Nicolas de Vertain, laborer within the jurisdiction of Avesnes, to phles de forest, merchant there residing (his wife Franchoise Petit, gentlewoman) the heritage of a razière of land bearing upon the said deforest, lying toward the Green Valley, owned on two sides by Jherosme de Seneffe and Jean Gobert.

1590, Dec. 22, Phles de forest, merchant at Avesnes (his wife franchoise petit, gentlewoman) buys of Jherosme meurant the heritage of a razière of land lying upon the Green Valley held by Jherosme Meurant and said purchaser.

1593, Dec. 8, Phles de forest, merchant burgher residing at Avesnes, (his wife franchoise petit, gentlewoman) purchases of Jean de Salengre the heritage of a *journde* lying behind the Green Valley holden on two sides by said purchaser.

1594, April 13, Phles de Forest, merchant residing at Avesnes, rents to Jean Waston a cottage and garden at the Green Valley.

1625 (personal Taxes). At the Little Market, Phles de forest, living on his means, one serving woman,—7 livres. (Son of the Phles above ?)

8. *Gilles de Forest* 3rd (son of Philippe); 1582, *dominica 30 post oct. pass*, bans of marriage between

* Probably son of André Francquart, receiver of Avesnes, deceased 15 March, 1557, who married damoiselle Aldegonde Marin a relative of the wife of Baltazar de Forest. (Necrological Inscriptions of Avesnes.)

Gille de forest of avesnes and Catherine du trieu of binche ; * 3rd ban in die ascensionis.

1592 and 1598, Gille de forest, jurat of Avesnes.

1592 (List of fiefs) Gilles de Forest, 106 sols at the Green Valley, and three and a half razières of pasture depending from the Hedge of Avesnes.

1601 (List of fiefs) Gilles de forest has received from his father Phles the use of a woodlot which said Philippe obtained in rent from the Seigneur (d'Arschot) in 1581 at a rental of 30 sols.

1601, Oct. 24, Jean Waton sells to Gilles de Forest, merchant burgher residing at Avesnes (his wife Catherine du Trieu, gentlewoman) the heritage of six *coup.* of garden, etc.

1625 (Personal taxes,) Gilles de forest, rue de Normeries (now Victor Hugo), living on his means, a daughter and one serving woman,—8 livres.

9. *Nicolas de Forest.* (List of Personal Taxes, 1625.) At the Little Market, Nicolas de Forest, draper, and his wife Marie Motte, 6 livres.

1637, Nicolas de Forest living. His sons were baptised as follows : Jacques, Sept. 16, 1626 ; Jean François, Aug. 14, 1629 ; Antoine, Oct. 25, 1632 ; Simon, Oct. 30, 1635. (See App., art. 54, for another Nicolas.)

OTHER DE FORESTS OF AVESNES.

10. 1579, Dominica IIo post. trinitat. solemn service at St. Francois for Gilles Meurant and Anne de forest his wife. †

* Catherine du Trieu, of Binche ; same name with Du Trieux.

† A Loys Meurant was "mayeur" of Avesnes in 1599.

1580, Feb. 4, Marriage of Jean Baret and Anne de Forest, both of Avesnes.

1585, Dominica in octavo passionis, service for Marie de foret, *in extremis*.

THE MAILLARDS OF AVESNES.

11. 1572, Michel Maillard mayor of Felleries and resident there. (Felleries is a commune near Avesnes.)

1579, Marriage of Anthoine Maloart, of S. Yllier (St. Hilaire), and franchoise mouteur of Avesnes.

1579, In die sancti Petri, marriage of Jacques del motte, of Avesnes, and Franchoise Maillard of Felleries.

1582, Dec. 12, Nicolas Maillard, residing at Felleries, makes showing that by the decease of his father Michel Maillard he has inherited a freehold at said Felleries.

1584, Marriage of Noel Joly and Susanne Maillard, both of Avesnes.

1585, Feb. 11, Franchois Maillard, handiworkman (*manouvrier*), dwelling in the Green Valley on the road to Mons (his wife Marguerite Dwehault *damoiselle*) sells a rental to Jean le Vegnon.*

1595 (List of fiefs), Bastien Maillard in right of Jeanne Quarret his wife, receives from her brother Nicaise Quarret thirteen razières of land at St. Hilaire.

1606, Marcq Maillard receives (the above land?) from his mother Jeanne Quarret.

* This entry is puzzling. How could the wife of a *manouvrier* be a *damoiselle*?

THE DU FOSSET GENEALOGY.*

12. There is a Du Fossé family which bears *sable, a pascal lamb argent holding a cross to which is attached a little pennon of two points charged with a cross gules.*

1ST GENERATION.

Antoine Dufossé married Isabeau Resteau (bearing *sable, a rateau or in pale*), a daughter of Guillaume Resteau and Marie Malapert.

2ND GENERATION.

Gaspard Dufossé

Jean Dufossé married Catherine Fayence (or Layence) daughter of

Françoise Dufossé married Jean le Roy (bearing *azure, three martlets or, with a crescent argent in coeur*) son of

Marie Dufossé married Nicolas Chamart (bearing *argent, three testes of leopards gules crowned with or*) son of

Catherine Dufossé married Melchior Duforé, from whom sprang Baltazard who married Jeanne Farin. (Adrienne Marin, in records of Avesnes.)

Waudrue Du Fossé married Claude Cannone, son of

Isabeau Dufossé married Guillaume le Pris, from whom sprang Jean, Barbe, and Philippe le Pris.

* Extract from vol. IV, page 50r, of the Genealogies of M. de Sars of Solmon, being manuscript 604 of the Bibliothèque Communale of Valenciennes. (Translated by J. W. De Forest.)

3RD GENERATION.

Philippe Dufossé married Wadrue de Franeau (bearing *gules, a licorne argent seated*) daughter of Claude Franeau* and Marie de Buchelier.

Catherine Dufossé married Philippe Hallet (bearing *gules, a fleur de lys argent*).

4TH GENERATION.

Waudrue Dufossé married Guy Vivien, counsellor at the sovereign court of Mons (bearing *argent. a chevron gules acc. by 2 testes de boeuf of the same in chief, and a hure sable in point*), son of Henry Vivien seigneur of Auxe-en-partie, and of Marie Defossé his second wife.

REGISTERS OF THE HUGUENOT CHURCH OF SEDAN.

13. 1601, Sunday 23rd day of said month (September), at the catechism the said Sr du Tilloy blessed the marriage of Jesse des forests, son of Jean des forests merchant residing in this city, and of Marie du Cloux, daughter of Nicaise du Cloux merchant residing in this city.

1602, Sunday 7th day of said month (July), on which day was celebrated the Lord's Supper, Monsieur du Tilloy, having made the evening exhortation, baptized Marie, daughter of Jesse des forests merchant residing in this city, and of Marie du Cloux his wife:—Godfather and godmother, Estienne du Cloux and Marie Aubertin.

* Claude Franeau is of the family of Count Gustave Franeau de Gommegnies, chateau de Rivade, near Salbris, department Loir et Cher.

1604, July 22; baptised, Jean, son of Jesse des forests merchant residing in this city, and of Marie du Cloux;—Godfather and godmother, Jean le Vasseur and Magdeleine du Cloux.

1606, March 7; baptised, Henry, son of Jesse des foretz merchant residing in this city, and of Marie du Cloux his wife:—Sponsors, Henry de Lambremont merchant residing at Sinonne, and Rachel Aubertin wife of said Lambremont.

1607, November 1; baptised, Elizabeth, daughter of Jesse des forests merchant residing at Moncornet in Thierache,* and of Marie du Cloux:—Sponsors, Abraham le groa, goldsmith, and Elizabeth Aubertin his wife.

1608, December 11; baptised, David, son of Jesse des forest merchant-dyer residing at Moncornet in Thierache, and of Marie du Cloux:—Sponsors, David de Lambremont, Merchant-dyer at Montcornet, and Marie de Lambremont, daughter of Henry residing at Simonne.

(Here follows a gap of eight years in the registers, so that the baptism of Rachel de Forest, probably in 1609, is lost.)

THE DU CLOUX FAMILY (SEDAN).

14. 1598, April 16; baptism of a daughter of Daniel du Cloux, apothecary, and his wife Jeanne Barival; sponsors, Nicaise du Cloux and Marie Aubertin.

* Montcornet in Thierache, an eastern canton of Picardy.

1601, April 14; marriage of Etienne du Cloux, son of Nicaise of Sedan, and Susanna Peltre daughter of David.

1604, October, baptism of Marie; 1606, February, baptism of Jeanne; both daughters of Estienne du Cloux, dyer and Susanna Peltre.

1608, July; baptism of Magdeleine, daughter of Estienne du Cloux, of Sedan, and Susanna Peltre; witnesses, David de Lambermont, of Montcornet, and Magdeleine du Cloux his wife.

1640, March 17, baptism of David, son of David du Cloux, surgeon, and of Magdeleine Lambermont. Witness, Jean du cloux, *huissier*.

1640, December 26; decease of Jean du cloux, *huissier*, aged 76 years, native of Chateau Renard.*

OTHER DU CLOUX, PROBABLY OF THE SAME STOCK.

15. Jean du Cloux, bailli of Sedan, deceased previous to 1596; his son Jean marries in that year Anne de Laval.

Another Jean du Cloux, born 1600, buried 29 July, 1672, was notary and police counsellor; his sons were James, advocate, Philip apothecary, and Paul, advocate.

Isaac du Cloux, surgeon, married Marie lepin; died before 1667. His sons were Jonas, surgeon, and Abraham who married Jeanne Brandon in 1647.

*The original commune perhaps of the family. A *huissier* corresponded to our court summoner, or usher.

HOLLAND RECORDS.

REGISTERS OF THE WALLOON CHURCHES.*

16. 1603, Feb. 1. Received member of the church of Leyden by letter from Bergues, Anne Maillard. (Wife of Jean de Forest and mother of Jesse.)

1603, March 29. Received member of the church of Leyden, by letter from Berghen op Zoom, Jehan de Forest. (Father of Jesse.)

1604, Sept. 20. Received member of the church of Amsterdam by letter from Leyden, Anne Maillard.

1604, Nov. 25. Received member of the church of Amsterdam by letter from Leyden, Jan du Forret.

1605, April 9; Received member of the church of Leyden by confession of faith, Gerard du Forest (brother of Jesse).

1606, May; Gerard de Forest purchases land at Leyden of the burgomasters for a dyery. (Civic records.)

1606, Oct. 21. Betrothal of Jan le fèvre of Leyden, *caffatier*, 22 years, (*a puero* at Amsterdam) residing in the Weaveries, accompanied by Anne Cheval his mother, and of Anne des forests of Avesnes, aged 19 years (since five years at Amsterdam), accompanied by Anne Maillard her mother.—Said Anne is required to produce a certificate of consent from her father.—The certificate is produced, signed by Gerardus Schepenius minister at Vosmeer near Berghen op Zoom.

1607, January 24. Married at Amsterdam, Jan le Febure (Le Fèvre) and Anne du Forest.

* The Walloon church registers are in French. For the sake of convenience a few briefs from the Dutch civic records, all designated as such, are added.

1608, Feb. 3. Received member of the church of Leyden by letter from Amsterdam, Gerard des Forest.

1611, Aug. 12. Married at Leyden, Gerard des Forests native of Avesnes in the country of Hainaut, and Hester de la Grange native of Leyden. (Daughter of Crispin de la Grange native of France.)

1611, Oct. 26. Received member of the church of Leyden by letter from the church of Lille, Melchior du Foret. (Brother of Jesse.)

1612, Dec. 9. Baptised at Leyden, Crespin son of Gerard du Forest.

1614, May. Baptised at Leyden, Susanne Forest daughter of Gerard.

1615, March 1. Baptized at Leyden, Jesse son of Jesse du Forest and of Marie du Clou. Witness, Melchior du Forest.

1616, Apr. 6. Baptised at Amsterdam, Jan, son of Melchior du Forest and of Marie Gobert. Witnesses, Jan Bruiere, and Adrienne fauquenes, widow of Simon Lescevin.

1616, July 10: Baptised, at Leyden, Isaac, son of Jesse du Forrest. Witnesses, Jan Veters, and Isaac de Syde and Helene Chanoine and Marie de Syde. (Settled at Harlem, N. Y., 1636-7.)

1616. Gerard de Forest purchases a house upon the Mare at Leyden. (Civic records of Leyden.)

1617. Oct. 6. Gerard de Forest purchases the right of citizenship at Leyden; he registers himself a native of Avesnes in the country of Hainaut. (Civil records.)

1617, Oct. 7. Baptised at Leyden, Israel, son of Jesse Des Forest and of Marie du Cloux.

1620, May 31. Baptised at Leyden, Rachel, daughter of Guerard du Forest and of Esther de la Grange.

1620, Sept. 13. Baptised at Leyden, Philippe, son of Jesse des Forest and of Marie du Cloux. Witness, Jean de la Marlier.

1622, February. Received member of the church of Leyden by confession of faith, Henry Des forest. (Son of Jesse.)

1622, June. Received member of the church of Leyden by confession of faith, Jean des Forest. (Son of Jesse.)

1622, June. Received member of the church of Leyden by confession of faith, Rachel des Forest. (Dau. of Jesse.)

1623, January 22. Baptised at Leyden, Jeremie, son of Gerard des Forest.

HOLLAND RECORDS SUBSEQUENT TO EMIGRATION.

17. 1626, Nov. 27. Subscribed in marriage at Leyden, Jean Mounier (or Moenyer) * with Ragel de Foree. Witnesses, Geraerd de Foree and Hester de la Grange.

1629, July 26. Jesse des Forest leaves Leyden with church letters for (illegible).

1631, October. Received into the church of Leyden, Rachel des Forest, wife of Jean Mounier, coming from Tobago where her husband remains. (See ante, 1626, Nov. 27.)

1633, Oct. 19. Gerard des Forest in his will (not his last) leaves 200 florins to his mother Anne Mailard at Amsterdam. Guardians of his children, Jan

* Jean Mousnier la Montagne. The record is in Dutch.

de Foré and Isaac Bavelaer. He signs "Gerard des Forest." Will written by de Haes, notary. (Civic records.)

1640, Apr. 21. Anne Maillard (mother of Jesse de Forest) buried at Amsterdam. (Mort. rec. Wal. ch.)

1654, August. Decease of Gerrit Foré (Gerard de Forest) at Leyden. (Mort. rec. Wal. ch.)

1654, Nov. 30. Barend van de Kaslede (Kaskelen?) becomes co-guardian, in place of Gerard de Forest deceased, of three infant children of Gysbrecht van Inburch by Rachel le Monier de la Montagne, the said Rachel and her brother Guillaume being issue of the marriage of Rachel de Forest with Jean le Monier de la Montagne, etc., etc. (Civil rec. of Leyden.)

1656, June 7. Partition of the estate of Gerard des Forest, widower of Hester de la Grange. Total, 15,325 florins. Heirs: Chrispin des Forest; Sara des Forest widow of Barent van de Kaskelen; David du Toit husband of Hester des Forest. (Probate rec. of The Hague.)

1665, March 13. David du Foret becomes guardian of the above mentioned children of Gysbrecht van Inburch and Rachel le Monier de la Montagne. (Civ. rec.)

1669. The aforesaid van Inburch children acknowledge receipt of the papers, etc., which came to them through the death of their uncle Jean de Forest, deceased Apr. 6, 1668. (Civic records. Date uncertain.)

RECORDS REFERRING TO JEAN DE FOREST, SUPPOSED
BROTHER OF JESSE.

18. 1617, February. Received into church of Leyden by confession of faith, Jan du Forest and his wife.

1619, Dec. 1. Baptised at Leyden, Jean, son of Jean du Forest.

1622, June 19. Baptised at Leyden, Jeanne, dau. of Jean du Forest.

1624, Nov. 17. Baptised at Leyden, Pierre, son of Jean du Forest.

THE DU FORESTS OF TOURCOING.*

19. 1612, June 28. Received into the church of Amsterdam by letter from Haarlem, Jean du Forest.

1612, Sept. 2. Received into the church of Haarlem by letter from Amsterdam, Jean du Forest and his wife Tonnette Mouton.

1615, Apr. 26. Baptised at Haarlem, Marie daughter of Jan du Forest and Tonnette Mouton.

1617, January 29. Baptised at Haarlem, Isaac, son of Jan du Forest and Tonnette Mouton.

1614, Pentecost. Received into the church of Leyden by confession of faith, Jenne de Forest.

1617, June and Aug. Received into church of Leyden by letter from church of Cantorberi, Arnoul du Forest and wife.

1619, Aug. 18. Married at Leyden, Jacques Fremoult and Magdeleine du Forest.

1620 and 1621. Received into church of Leyden by letter from church of Cantorbury, Abraham du Forest.

* Records of this family at Canterbury, England, extend from 1590 to 1631.

1623, August. Received into church of Leyden by confession of faith, Jean de Forré.

(There is also a Gilles Forest from Mouneau and Bisan, and other Forests; also van Forests and van de Forests, obviously of French origin; but no sign of relationship with the Avesnes de Forests.)

THE DU TRIEUX FAMILY.

(Walloon Ch. Rec.)

20. 1601, Apr. 22. Jaquemyne, widow of Philippe du Trieu, received into church of Leyden, by letter from Norwich, England. (This deceased Philippe may have been father and grandfather of the two following.)

1616, January 3. Amsterdam; baptised, Philippe son of Philippe du Trieu and his wife Jacqueline Noiret.

1617, October. Received into the ch. of Leyden, by letter from Amsterdam, Philippe du Trieu and his wife Jaquemie Norret.

1617, Dec. 31. Received into the ch. of Amsterdam, by letter from Leyden, Philippe du Tryheu and Jaquemie Norret.

1619, Feb. 10. Baptised at Amsterdam, Philip son of Philip du Trieux and Jacquemin Nouret.

1620, Feb. 9. Baptised at Amsterdam, Madeleine daughter of Philippe du Trieux and Jacquemie Noiret.

(No further appearance of Philippe du Trieux in the Walloon ch. records of Holland. Next found in New Amsterdam, where his daughter Sara, probably born there in 1624, married Isaac de Forest in 1641.

It seems clear that Riker is mistaken in giving Susannah de Chiney as the name of this Philippe du Trieux's wife. The name de Trieu probably sprang from the village of Trieu in Belgium.)

OTHER DU TRIEUX.

1584, Jenne du Trieu joins ch. of Leyden by letter from Bruges.

1585, Oct. 2. Peronne Brunne, wife of Jacques du Trieu, joins ch. of Leyden from Antwerp.

1607, Easter. Marie du Trieu received into ch. of Leyden on profession of faith.

1611, Feb. Anne du Trieu, dau. of Jacques, inscribed member of the ch. of Amsterdam.

1612, Easter. Antoinette du Trieu inscribed member of the ch. of Leyden.

1613, Dec. 29. Baptised at Leyden, Jan, son of Jean du Trieu and Marguerite de Lalleu.*

1615, Easter. Elizabeth du Trieu, and Daniel du Trieu, inscribed members of the ch. of Leyden.

1615, October. Cateline du Trieu in Leyden ch. register.

1618, December. Jaques du Trieu in Leyden ch. register.

1619, July 4. Bapt. at Leiden, Jenne, daughter of Jean du Trieu and Marguerite de la Leu. (See above, 1613.)

1619, Feb. 10. Bapt. at Leyden, Jaques son of Pierre du Trieu.

1620, Easter. Inscribed in Leyden ch. register, Marie du Trieu; also Matthieu du Trieu.

* In 1621 Jan de Trou, wool-comber, with wife and five children, proposed to accompany Jesse de Forest to Virginia.

PART II.

PAPERS CONCERNING EMIGRATION TO AMERICA.

21. PETITION OF WALLOONS AND FRENCH CONCERNING VIRGINIA.*

His lordship the ambassador of the most serene king of Great Britain is humbly entreated to advise and answer us in regard to the articles which follow.

I. Whether it would please his Majesty to permit fifty to sixty families, as well Walloons as French, all of the Reformed religion, to go and settle in Virginia, a country under his rule, and whether it would please him to undertake their protection and defence from and against all, and to maintain them in their religion.

II. And whereas the said families might find themselves near upon three hundred persons ; and whereas they would wish to carry with them a quantity of cattle, as well for the cultivation of the earth as for their sustenance, and for these reasons would need more than one ship ; whether his Majesty would not accommodate them with one, equipped and furnished with cannon and other arms, on board of which, together with the one they would provide, they could accomplish their voyage ; the same returning to ob-

* The translation in the New York Documents being very loose, I have made my own. For the French original see Baird's "Huguenot Emigration," I, 348-351.

tain merchandise for the regions granted by his said Majesty, as well as that of the country.

III. Whether he would permit them, on their arrival in said country, to choose a convenient spot for their abode among the places not yet cultivated by those whom it has pleased his Majesty to send thither already.

IV. Whether, having secured the said spot, they might build a city for their protection and furnish it with the necessary fortifications, wherein they might elect a governor and magistrates for the maintenance of order as well as justice, under those fundamental laws which it has pleased his Majesty to establish in said regions.

V. Whether his said Majesty would furnish them cannons and munitions for the defence of said place, and grant them right in case of necessity to make powder, fabricate balls and found cannons, under the flag and arms of his said Majesty.

VI. Whether he would grant them a circuit or territory of eight English miles radius, that is sixteen in diameter, wherein they might cultivate fields, meadows, vineyards and the like, which territory they would hold, whether conjointly or severally, from his Majesty in such fealty and homage as his Majesty should find reasonable, without allowing any other to dwell there unless by taking out papers of residence within said territory, wherein they would reserve rights of inferior lordship; and whether those of them who could live as nobles would be permitted to style themselves such.

VII. Whether they would be permitted in the said lands to hunt all game, whether furred or feathered,

to fish in the sea and rivers, and to cut heavy and small timber, as well for navigation as other purposes, according to their desire ; in a word, whether they might make use of everything above and below ground according to their will and pleasure, saving the royal rights ; and trade in everything with such persons as should be thereto privileged.

Which provisions would extend only to said families and their members, without allowing those who should thereafter come into said territory to pretend thereto ; unless they themselves should grant them according to their power and not beyond, providing his said Majesty should not make them a new concession.

And whereas they have learned that his said Majesty has established in London a public warehouse at which all merchandise from those countries must be unloaded and not elsewhere ; and considering that it is more than reasonable that those who by their toil and industry have procured to the public the enjoyment of that land should be the first to enjoy the fruits thereof ; they will submit to the ordinances which for this purpose have been established there, the same to be communicated to them in order to their better observance.

Under which conditions and privileges they would promise such fealty and obedience as loyal and obedient subjects owe to their King and Sovereign Lord, submitting themselves to the laws generally established in said countries to the best of their ability.

Upon the preceding my Lord Ambassador aforesaid will please give advice, as also, if it be his

pleasure, cause the said privilege to be sent in due form as early as may be, on account of the little time remaining between this and March (a season suitable for the embarcation) for attending to everything requisite. Which doing he will obligate his servants to pray God for the accomplishment of his pious purposes, and for his health and long life. *

JESSE DE FOREST.

AGREEMENT (ROUND-ROBIN) OF THE WALLOONS.

22. We promise his lordship, the ambassador of the most serene king of Great Britain, that we will go to settle in Virginia, a part of his Majesty's dominions, at the earliest time practicable, and this under the conditions set forth in the articles which we have communicated to his said lordship the ambassador, and not otherwise.

Jesse de Forest, dyer, wife, 5 children.

Nycolas de la Marlier, dyer, wife, 2 children, etc., etc.

(There are fifty-six signatures, of which only three are marks. The paper represents fifty-six men, forty-one married women, and one hundred and thirty children, making a total of 227 persons. For printed and photographic copies see Baird, I, pp. 162 and 351.) †

* The above petition was forwarded to London in Sir Dudley Carleton's letter of July 21, 1621. At London, in later days probably, it was erroneously endorsed 1622, an error exposed by Doct. Charles W. Baird.

† Some of the names appear among the Walloons who came to New Amsterdam in 1624 and later.

ANSWER OF THE VIRGINIA COMPANY.

23. The humble answere of so many of his Ma'ties Councill for Virginia as could at present be assembled, they being in his Highnes name required by the Rt. Ho'ble S^r George Calvert Principall Secretary of State to deliver their opinions concerning certaine articles putt up by some Walloones and frenchemen desirous to goe to Virginia.

I. If it stand with his Ma'ties gracious favour they do not conceive it any inconvenience at present to suffer sixtie families of Walloones and frenchmen not exceeding the number of 300 persones to goe and inhabite in Virginia ; the sayd persons resolving and taking oath to become His Ma'ties and His Successours faithful and obedient subjects ; and being willing as they make profession, to agree in points of faith, so likewise to bee conformable to the forme of governm't now established in the Church of England.

II. They esteeme it so Royall a favour in His Ma'tie and so singular a benefitt to the said Walloons and frenchmen to bee admitted to live in that fruitfull land under the protection and governm't of so mighty and pious a Monarch as His Ma'tie is that they ought not to expect of His sacred Ma'tie any ayde of shipping or other chargeable favour. And as for the Company for Virginia their stock is so utterly exhausted by these three last yeares supplies as they are not able to give them any further helpe in that kinde, but onely in point of advise & Councill for the cheapest transportation of themselves and goodes and the most frugall and profitable managing

of their affayres, if his Royal Ma'tie please so to command them.

3, 4, 5, 6, 7 Articles. They conceive that for the prosperity and principally the securing of the plantation in His Ma'ties obedience it is not expedient that the sayd ffamilies should sett downe in one grosse bodie, w'ch the demaundes specified, but that they should rather bee placed by convenient numbers in the principall Citties, Borroughs and Corporacions in Virginia, as themselves shall choose; there being given unto them such proporcion of land and all other priviledges and benefitts whatsoever in as ample manner as to the naturall Englishe; and this course they out of their experience do conceive likely to prove better and more comfortable to the sayd Walloons and ffrenchmen than that other w'ch they desire.

All these their opinions they do most humbly submit to the most excellent wisdom of His sacred Ma'tie.

JOHN FERRAR, Deputy.

(Endorsed) August XI, 1621.

A RESOLUTION OF THE STATES OF HOLLAND AND WEST FRIESLAND.

24. 21 April. 1622. The aforementioned Directors (of the Dutch West India Company) report that they have examined the paper relating to the transporting of Families to the West Indies, and are of opinion that it (such action) would be very advantageous to the Company, and that therefore an effort ought to be made to promote it, the promise being given that they

should be employed ; no more to be done till Directors should be appointed, provided the Assembly approve of the promise being given ; which being duly deliberated upon by the Lords, Gentlemen and Cities, it is unanimously resolved and agreed that the aforesaid promise shall be made, the Magistracy being informed thereof, and action taken accordingly.

(Endorsed) Directors' report on the paper concerning the Families for the West Indies. (Royal Archives at the Hague.)

RESOLUTIONS OF THE REPRESENTATIVE COUNCILS
OF HOLLAND AND WEST FRIESLAND.

25. The Representative Councils of the States of Holland and West Friesland having examined the petitions presented to the Lords Gentlemen of the States General by Jesse des Forest, and sent by the aforementioned Lords Gentlemen to the States of Holland and West Friesland, or to the Representative Councils of the same, on the 26th of this month of August, petitioning authorization to inscribe and enroll for the colonies families of the Christian reformed religion willing to make the voyage to the West Indies for the advancement and service of the aforementioned West India Company, and taking action on the said petition, they have charged and authorized the said Jesse des Forest, as they do hereby charge and authorize him, to inscribe and enroll for the colonies all families having the qualifications requisite for being of use and service to the country, the same to be transported to the West Indies ; under condition that the said Forest so does with the mutual

knowledge and correspondence of the magistrates of the respective cities where he may inscribe and enroll as above mentioned, and that he be bound to furnish a report thereof to the Lords Gentlemen.

Done at the Hague the 27th of August, 1622.
(Royal Archives at the Hague.)

PAPERS OF THE EMIGRATION OF 1636.

HENDRICK DE FOREST; SETTLEMENT OF HIS ESTATE.*

26. Specification of what Johannes La Montagne hath paid and disbursed to divers persons on account of debts and for the maintaining of the house and plantation of the late Hendrick de Forest, deceased, on the 26th of July, 1637.

July	(florins)
3. To Cornelius Van Vorst for 2 skepels of rye	5
“ Hendrick Van Vorst “ 2 “ maize	4
“ Jan Peterson “ 2½ days mowing	5

(The account contains many items, running from July 3, 1637, to July 22, 1638, and bringing the estate in debt to La Montagne for 1094 florins. Then comes the *per contra* account, as follows.)

Board of Montaenye	98
Goods sold belonging to deceased	159
By 100 lbs of tobacco at 15 stivers per lb.	75
By 100 lbs of “ 12 “ “	60

* In the N. Y. State Library, Albany. N. Y. Col. Mss: New Netherland: Reg. of Prov. Sec. 1638-1652.

And for silver spoons given to the domine by Jacobs Sandelyn	18
By a pair of old shoes and a pair of slippers	4
	<hr/>
	414

Clear balance, 680 fl.

The 23rd July 1638, Examined and accepted this.

EVERARDUS BOGARDUS, Eccl. Monatus.

I undersigned, as Secretary of New Netherland, have, after collation, found this to agree with the original which is sent to Fatherland. Done as above.

CORNELIS VAN TIENHOVEN, Secretary.

27. Conditions and terms on which Everardus Bogardus hath sold in Fort Amsterdam to the highest bidder, for account of the widow and heirs of Hendrick de Forest dec'd, what follows: (No date.)*

First, the purchaser shall be bound to tender and pay within the term of twelve months, commencing from the date hereof, the moneys proceeding from the undermentioned property, and that in three instalments: the first, cash down; the 2nd, in six months; the third and last payment as above stated.

The house, 42 feet long, eighteen feet wide, with 2 doors, encircled with round palisades.

Two milch cows: 1 heifer 2 years old: 1 bull of 1 year: half a bullcalf of this year: 2 old goats: half of a little male kid of this year: $\frac{1}{2}$ a kid of this year: 6 hens and 2 cocks with about 20 chickens: 4 guns good and bad: 1 kettle: 1 churn: 4 axes: six hoes: 3 siths (sickles): 2 scythes: 2 iron forks: the one

* Register of Provincial Secretary.

fourth of 600 tobacco plants and 1 tobacco house : the half of the grain of one morgen of land : one boat.

Johannes la Montagne remains the purchaser for fl. 1800.

BRIEFS OF PAPERS RELATIVE TO HENDRICK
DE FOREST (ALBANY).

28. 1638, Sept. 16. (Court Proceedings.) Johannes La Montagne agt. Rev. Everardus Bogardus: on application of plaintiff that defendant, who is attorney for the late Hendrick de Forest's widow, shall take possession of said de Forest's house, stock and plantation, on defendant paying him a balance due him by said de Forest: ordered that parties submit both claim and answer in writing to next court. (Vol. IV, 19.)

1638, Sept. 30. (Court Proceedings, IV, 20.) Johannes La Montagne versus Everardus Bogardus: decree of sale of Hendrick de Forest's estate, and plaintiff to be paid all his advances on said estate.

1639, July 18. (Idem, I, 139.) Receipt of Andries Hudde for 200 carolus guilders in part payment by Johannes La Montagne of the price of the estate of the late Hendrick de Forest.

1640, Aug. 28. (Idem, I, 216.) Declaration of Johannes La Montagne, and Andries Hudde husband of Gertrude Bornstra relict of the late Hendrick de Forest, that they had amicably agreed respecting the bowery and personal estate left by the said de Forest (estate called Vredendal) on the Island of Manhattan.

1640, Oct. 11. (Idem, I, 216.) Receipt of Johannes la Montagne to Andries Hudde, in his above men-

tioned quality, for the sixth part of the personal estate of the late Hendrick de Foreest, from which he, la Montagne, promises to pay to Johannes and Isaac de Forest such portion as is rightfully theirs.

1647, May. 9. (Vol. G.G. 216.) Patent: Johannes la Montagne, councillor of New Netherland, 100 morgens of land on Manhattan Island, scituate in the flat between the hills and kill and a point stretching between two kills called Rechgawanes to the East River, which land belonged to the estate of the late Hendrick Foreest, and was purchased by Mr. la Montagne at public auction for 1700 guilders.—Harlem, N. Y.*

PAPERS AT ALBANY RELATIVE TO ISAAC DE FOREST.

29. 1643, July 6. (Vol. III, 137.) Isaac de Forest and John Denton have agreed in the following manner: that John Denton shall live on his plantation during three years, beginning 1st October, 1643, and terminating 1st October, 1646. Isaac delivered with the plantation fourteen goats, one buck, four sows of this year. The risk of dying creatures shall be borne between them, and the increase, after deduction of the original stock, shall be equally divided. The produce of the land, with the expenses of its cultivation, shall be equally divided. At the season of planting Isaac shall furnish the tenant with a servant, and plow again the field in the fall, for which he shall be paid by the tenant after harvest.

ISAAC DE FOREST, †
JOHN DENTON.

* See par. 31 for a similar renewal of title by Isaac de Forest.

† Changed by the copyist to "de Foreest," as in various other cases.

30. (No date. Vol. VIII, 307.) Petition of Isaac de Forest for leave to contract with Jacob van Couwenhoven for all the strong beer he will brew in a year. Granted.

1645, Sept. 5. (vol. G.G. 119.) Patent by William Kieft to Isaac de Forest "of a certain lot of land for a house and garden lying on the west side of a lot of Philip Geraerdy,"—evidently in the village of New Amsterdam. Measurement, 67 rods, 8 feet, 8 inches.

1646, Aug. 22. (vol. G.G. 154.) Patent to Isaac de Forest for lot east of Fort Amsterdam, opposite the five stone houses, and adjoining Domine Bogardus' lot.

31. 1647, May 15, (vol. G.G. 219). We Willem Kieft the Director General and the Council in behalf of the High and Mighty Lords the States General, his Highness the Prince of Orange, and the noble Lords the Managers of the Incorporated West India Company, in New Netherland residing, by these presents do publish and declare that we on this day, the date underwritten, have given and granted unto Isaac de Forest a certain piece of land lying on the island of Manhattan containing fifty morgens, at the place where northward Jochem Pietersen's land lies next to his land,* and westward where Mr. Conraet van Keulen's land lies next his land, from Keulen to the kil that runs around the Island, with the express condition and terms that he the said Isaac de Forest, or they who to his action may hereafter succeed, the noble Lords the Managers aforesaid shall acknowledge as his Lords and Patrons under the sovereignty

* Jochem Pietersen Kuyter, a wealthy settler from Denmark.

of the High and Mighty Lords the States General, and unto their director and Council here shall in all things be conformed as all good citizens are in duty bound ; Provided also that he shall be further subject to all such burdens and imposts as already by the noble Lords have been enacted ; Constituting therefore the said Isaac de Forest in our stead in the real and actual possession of the aforesaid piece of land, giving unto him by these presents the full power, authority and special license the aforesaid parcel of land to enter, cultivate, inhabit and occupy in like manner as he may lawfully* do with other his patrimonial lands and effects without our the grantors in the quality aforesaid thereunto any longer having, reserving, or saving any part, action or control whatever ; but to the behalf as aforesaid from all desisting from this time forth forevermore, promising moreover this transport firmly, inviolably and irrevocably to maintain, fulfill and execute, and finally to do all that in equity we are bound to do. Witness these presents by us undersigned and confirmed with our seal. Done in Fort Amsterdam in the New Netherland this 15th day of May, A. D. 1647.* WILLEM KIEFT

BRIEFS CONTINUED ; 1649-1664.

32. 1649, Aug. 2. Deed : Isaac de Forest, of a portion of his lot on Manhattan Island to Wm. Beekman.

1653, May 17. Deed : by Jan Snediger to Isaac Forrest of house and lot in Pearl Street ; also, in

* The original grant was made in 1636-7, but had been forfeited by abandonment during the Indian war ; hence this renewal of the patent.

1653, July 22, deed of same lot by Isaac de Foreest to Adraien Keyser.

1653, Sept. 9. Isaac de Foreest deeds to Hendrick Gerritsen a house and lot near the fort ; on the same day he deeds a house and lot near the Company's Mansion to Maximilian van Geele.

1653. Isaac de Forest is taxed 100 guilders for repairing the fortifications ; (no other person is taxed more than 150 guilders.)

1653, Nov. 11. In a document of this date Isaac de Forest is named in a list of "some of the most influential burghers and inhabitants of this city."

1654, June 27. Petition of Isaac de Forest, weighmaster, for leave to sell a hogshead of tobacco, retained for his fees. Granted.

1664, March 17. A list "of the most affluent inhabitants of this city" gives Isaac Foreest 1500 florins of estate. The highest figures are, Frederick Philipsen, 80,000 florins; Cornelis Steenwick, 50,000; Nicolaes de Meyer, 50,000; Olof Stevense van Cortlandt, 45,000; Jeronimus Elbingh, 30,000. (Doc. Rel. to Col. Hist. of N. Y., vol. II, 699-700.)

1664, Apr. 16. (Albany Mss. vol. H.H. 58.) Isaac Foreest having covered his lot with a mansion which is "an ornament to the city," obtains a grant of a strip adjoining to build a woodshed.

ALDERMANIC RECORDS OF NEW AMSTERDAM.*

33. 1655, (vol. II). Isaac de Foreest sues B. Meindertsen for not repairing a house rented by Meindertsen on that condition.

* In the City Hall, New York. I copy from the English translation.

1655, (vol. II). Isaac de Foreest sells land in the Midwont for fifty-two beaverskins.

1656, January 31 (vol. II). Isaac de Foreest elected Schepen by forty votes.

1657, April 6, (vol. III, 276). Isaac de Foreest requests by petition the privilege of the Great Burgher Right, as he has been in the country over twenty years, has built considerably in this city and performed many services, as more fully mentioned in the petition.—The Burgomasters decree that petitioner's request cannot be granted, according to the order of the Director General and Council and the explanation of the Great and Small Burgher Right.

1658, Monday, January 28, (vol. III). The Director General and Council finding the number of Great Burghers too small to properly attend to their duties, add thereto the following persons: Isaacq de Forest, Frederick Lubbertsen, Borger Joris, Nicolas Verlett, Jeronimus Elbingh, Peter Cornellisen van der Veer.

1658, Feb. 2 (vol. III). The Director General and Council appoint Isaac de Forest (and three others) Schepens; also appoint Johannes de Peister, Presiding Schepen; Oloff Stevensen van Cortlandt, Burgomaster; the Heer Paulus Leendersen van der Grist, Old Burgomaster.

1658, Apr. 26. Isaac de Foreest asks to be discharged from the superintendence of the Brewers Street, as he is going to Fort Orange.

1661. Various entries showing Isaac de Forest resident at New Amsterdam and suing successfully for debts.

1663, August. Isaac de Forest claims 565 guilders

from Maria Verlett as widow administrator of Paulus Schrick. Claim allowed.

1663, October. Isaac de F. claims 500 guilders on mortgage against Andries Jaghenzen. Claim allowed.

1665, Isaac de F. residing in Brewers Street, is assessed two florins for the keep of soldiers. These assessments varied from one to four florins.

1665 & 1666, Isaac de F. brings frequent suits for debts.

1674, April. Suit for 170 florins ag't Susanna Garbaud. Debt acknowledged.

1674, July 24. Isaac foreest plaintiff against Jan Adraensen; cause postponed till next court day. (His last appearance in these volumes; he died not long afterward.)

EARLY DE FOREST WILLS IN SURROGATE'S OFFICE,
NEW YORK.

34. Isaac de Forest, 1672; Henricus, 1715; Johanis, 1774; Philip, 1782. No others of the early period, and no early inventories of estates. No will of Philip du Trieux, father-in-law of Isaac de Forest.

WILL OF ISAAC DE FOREST.

35. (Brief.) Made, June 4th, 1672, before Wm. Bogardus, notary public in New York; by Isaack Forest (or De Foreest) and Sarah Truix his wife, the former sickly and the latter in health; naming as living children Susannah (wife of Peter de Riemer), Johannes, Philip, Isaac, Hendricus, Maria and David. The estate is bequeathed to survivant, who may marry on the following conditions:—one-half the estate to

be divided to the children by portions as they successively marry or come of age ; also they must be properly fed and clothed, and taught reading and writing, and an art or trade. As co-guardians with the survivor were named " Mr. Jacob Kip their Cosin and Mr. Symore Johns Romyu their trusty and known friend."

PRINTED RECORDS OF NEW YORK CITY.

36. List of office-holders, from O'Callaghan's "New Netherland Register." Isaac de Foreest, as follows :

1652, one of the Nine Men.

1653, Inspector of Tobacco.

1655, Dec. 1. Farmer of the revenue of the Weigh-house.

(1656, Jan. 31. Elected Schepen. See *ante*, par. 33.)

1656, Apr. 8. Farmer of the revenue of the Weigh-house.

1657. Small Burgher.

(1658, Jan. 28. Great Burgher. See *ante*, p. 33.)

1658, Feb. 2. Schepen.

1660, May 6. Farmer of the revenue of Tavern Excise.

37. *Baptisms* : Children of Isaac de Foreest and Sarah du Trieux :—Jessen, Nov. 9, 1642 :—Susanna, Jan. 22, 1645 :—Gerrit, May 21, 1646 :—Gerrit, June 10, 1647 :—Marie, Jan. 10, 1649 :—Michiel, Jan. 10, 1649 :—Jan, March 27, 1650 :—Philip, July 28, 1652 :—Isaac, April 25, 1655 :—Hendrick, Sept. 29, 1657 :—David, Aug. 1, 1660 :—David, Dec. 19, 1663 :—Maria, July 7, 1666 :—David, Sept. 7, 1669. (Valentine's Manual.)

MARRIAGE RECORDS; FORM OF THE NAME.

38. The name appears as de Forest, du Forest, du Forest, d'Forest : e. g. Gerrit du Forest m. Cornelia Waldron, Apr. 1, 1716; Jesse du Forest m. Teuntje Tietsoort, May 29, 1719.

PETITION FROM THE CHILDREN OF ISAAC
DE FOREEST.*

39. To his Excellency Benjamin Fletsher Esq. Governur and Cap. Generall of the Province of New Yorke and its Dependences :

The humble Petition of Isaacq De foreest henricus De foreest David De foreest and Mary de Forest Most humbly do show :

That your Petitioners father Isaacq De foreest Senior deceased in the time of his life made his last Will & Testament whereby he gave to his widow being the mother of ye Petits now lately allsoo deceased the full enjoyment and usufrux of all his Estate reall and personall during the time of her widowhood or natural life, and after her decease bequeathed ye same to yor Petits together with ye rest of their Children, viz : John De foreest Susanna De foreest and Philip De foreest as more at large may appear by the Said Last will and Testament ; which yor Petits humbly crave that they may be admitted to prove before your Excellency :—

And your Petits do further in all humble Mannor offer to your Excellency that your Petits sd father in his said last will and Testament hath omitted to Nominate and appoint any person to bee the Executor of the sd last Will and Testament.

* From the Papers at Albany. Probable date, 1692-93.

Wherefor ; yor Petits for themselves and in behalfe of theire sd Brother Phillip de forest (who is now absent and residing in Albany) do most humbly Implore that it may please your Excellency to grant yor Excellencies Letters of administration unto ye said Isaac de forest and Henricus De forest for themselves and in trust for the rest of the Said Children and heires to administer upon the sd Estate and to devote the Same as by the Said Will is bequeathed and directed ;

And as in duty bound yor Petits shall ever pray.

ISAAC DE FOREEST
HENRICUS DE FOREEST
DAVYDT DE FOREEST
MRVA DE FOREEST.*

WILL OF HENRICUS DE FOREEST (BRIEF).

40. Of Madman's Neck, Hempstead, Queen's County, Nassau Island, province of New York, January 25th, 1714. Document mentions wife Barbara ; four sons, Barnet, Garratt, Henricus and Jesse ; four daughters, Sarah, Susanna, phebe and mary. The particulars indicate a moderate estate, but there is no appraisal. Testator styles himself a yeoman, and signs (if the copy is *literatim*) Henricus De forest.

* In the body of the petition, evidently written by a Dutch notary, these names take the following forms:—Isaacq De fforest, henricus De fforest, David De forest, Marij de forest. In the official copy they are Isaacq De forest, Hendricus De forest, David De forest, Mary De frest. Observe that ff stood for F, and that y and i were interchangeable, and that most people spelled by ear.

PART III.
STRATFORD (CT.) RECORDS.

CHURCH REGISTERS.

41. Covenanted and were baptized, August 7th, 97.
Mr. Deforest and his wife Martha.*

1698. Those whose names are underwritten renewed the covenant, January 11, 97/8, Samuel Blagge (And others. He was father of the above Martha.)

Baptized, July 23, 1704, Samuel son of David De Forest. (Born April 4, 1704; see extracts from Town Records.)

Abigail Peat, dau. of Samuel Peat, baptized Apr. 27, 1707. (Married the above Sam^l De Forest.)

Owened the covenant March 8, 1723, Sam^{ll} Defrees.†

Jan. 26, 1723/4, ye Names of those yt owned ye Covenant . . . Feb. 2—1723/4, Martha Defrees, etc.

Baptized, November 21, 1731, Joseph Deforest son of Sam^{ll} Deforest.

July 1, 1733. David Deforest Son of David Dfrst was Baptized.

* The context shows that the year was 1697. In the margin the Rev. Benj. L. Swan has written "David DeForest."

† It seems to have taken about twenty-seven years in Stratford to produce the form "De Frees." I cannot find that it was ever used by the family there, though known otherwheres.

March 19, 1734, David Deforest and his wife (and others) wr taken into full Communion.

June 2, 1734, Hepsibah Deforest Datr of Sam^l Deforest (bapt).

August 25, 1745. John Defrees son of Edward Defrees, baptized.

December 15, 1745. Hez: Defrees son of Benjamin Defrees was Baptized.

April 3, 1748. Nehemiah Defrees son of Benjamin Defrees was baptized.

January 7, 1749/50, Benjamin De frees son of Benjamin De frees, baptised.

VITAL STATISTICS FROM THE LAND RECORDS.*

42. Deaths.

Mr. David Deforest departed this life April 20th, 1721.—(Land Papers, vol. II, part 2, p. 485.)

Births.

Mary Deforest Daughter of David De forest by martha his Wife born Janua^{ry} 27th, 1696/7.

Sarah Deforeest Daughter of David De forest by martha his Wife born Novem^{ber} 9th, 1698.

Martha De forest Daughter of David Deforeest by martha his Wife born Aprill 13th, 1700.

David Deforeest Son of David Deforeest by martha his wife born Aprill 24th, 1702.

Sam^l Deforeest Son of David Deforeest by martha his wife born Aprill 4th, 1704.

Isaac Deforeest Son of David Deforeest by martha his wife Born Aprill 14th, 1706.

* Transferred at some unknown date to certain early volumes of the Land Papers.

Edward Deforest Son of David Deforest by martha his wife born July 25th, 1708.

Henry Deforest Son of David Deforest by martha his wife Born July 4th, 1710.

Elizabeth Deforest Daughter of David Deforest by martha his Wife Born June the 4th, 1714.

Benjamin Deforest Son of David Deforest by martha his Wife Born May 18, 1716. (The above 10 entries from Land Papers, vol. V, p. 13.)

Marriages.

Stephen Hawley & Mary Deforest was Joyned in marriage the 21st of July, 1720. (Vol. II, 478.)*

Mr. John Thompson & mis^s Martha Deforest wid. was Joyned in marriage Nov^r 30, 1721. (Vol. II, 479.)

Samuel Deforest & abigail Peat was Joyned in marriage Decemb^r 30, 1725. (Vol. II, 478.)

Elnathan Wheler & Martha Deforest were Joyned in marriage Decem^{br} 8th, 1726. (Vol. V, 14.)

Edward Deforest & Eunice Uffoot (Ufford) were Joyned in marriage June the 8th, 1733. (Vol. V, 2.)

Josiah Marvin of Norwalk & Elizabeth Deforest of Stratford were Joyn^d in marriage Feb^o ye 20th 1734.

Benj^m Deforest & Easter Beardslee of Stratford were Joyned in marriage Aprill 18, 1744. Certified by note from m^r Gold y^t married ^m. (Vol. V, 40.)

* Sarah, the second child of David 1st, married Benjamin Lewis (Edmond Lewis?), according to Orcutt's Stratford Genealogies.

CHILDREN OF BENJAMIN 1ST.*

43. Births.

Hezekiah Deforeest son of Benjaⁿ Deforeest by his wife Easter was born Decem^{br} 14th, 1745.

Nehemiah Deforeest Son of Benjamin Deforeest by his Wife Easter was born Aprill y 1st 1748.

Benjⁿ Deforeest son of Benjⁿ Deforeest by easther his wife was born Decem^{br} 28, 1749.

Cate Deforeest Daughter of Benjamin Deforeest by easther his wife was born March the 18th, 1753.

Easter Deforest Daughter of Benjamin Deforest by Easter his Wife was born May 29, 1755.

Isaac Deforest son of Benjamin Deforest by Easter his Wife was born Decem^r ye 16th, 1758.

Othniel Deforest Son of Benj. Deforest by his wife Esther was Born april the 10th A.D. 1761.

STRATFORD LAND RECORDS.

44. Samuel Blagge, merchant in Stratford, and his wife Mary Blagge, transfer, on the 2d July 1697, one acre of Orchard on Clapboard Hill to David Defforest of Stratford. *Brief.*

Samuell Hawley Jun., on the 6th April 1710, sells for three pounds and ten shillings, three acres of land to Mr. David Deforest (repeated as David de forest). *Brief.*

William Woolcott, of Winsor, Gentleman, sells, on the 25 May, 1711, for nine pounds current money, three acres of land at Newfield to David Deforest (repeated as David Deforeest). *Brief.*

Thomas Benit of Newtown, on the 3d of February,

* In vol. V, Land Papers.

1717, sells, for eight pounds money, two acres of meadow at Quimby's Rock, in Stratford, to Mr. David Deforest of Stratford. *Brief.*

PROBATE RECORDS OF STRATFORD.

(AT FAIRFIELD, CT.)

45. "Mr. David Defrees of Stratford being dead & there being no* persons in law to take care of his Estate A Court of Probate held in Stratford on ye 13th day of June 1721 do appoint and Impower Mrs. Martha Defrees widow relict of the said deceased Mr. Defrees to administer on the Said Estate She to make or cause to be made A true Inventory thereof And the same to Exhibit to the Court of Probate in Stratford within four months next after this date in order to a Settlement.

"And the said Martha Defrees acknowledgeth herself bound to N. Gould of Fairfield Esqr Judge of Probate for the County of Fairfield and his Sucksesers in that office in the Recognizance of 200^l for a faithful discharge of her Administration according to the above order of Court."

APPRAISAL OF DAVID DE FOREST'S ESTATE.

46. "A true Inventory of all and Singular the estate both real and moveable of Mr. David Defreest lately deceast in Stratford apprised June 10th day 1721 by us John Moss and (John) Levenworth being under oath as followeth."

(The list is minute and covers many small articles. The total is £ 388:6:0; but a few pounds were

* In Orcutt's *Stratford Genealogies* this "no" is made over into "110."

added later. A "coat & vest & briches" go in at £ 6; other articles of clothing at £ 4; a "periwigg," 10 shillings; a gold ring, 15 shillings; a "Dimon" (diamond), 16 shillings; an English Bible, 4 shillings; two other English Bibles at eleven pence; two Dutch Bibles, one shilling; a psalm book, 18 pence; a gun, two pounds; a sword, 4 shillings; a "mair and colt," two pounds; 28 sheep, eight pounds; eight s.; cows, cattle and swine, £ 26; bedding, sheets, etc. £ 20; house and homestead, £ 70; four acres at "fairfield, £ 80; three acres of orchard at "clapboard hill," £ 14; three acres of salt meadow, £ 12; "paper money, £ 6:16:5; "money," four shillings.)*

47. Order for Distribution of aforesaid estate is dated at Stratford, May 1st, 1724. The widow's account shows that, after paying debts, there remains a clear estate of £ 286:14:11; but I make it out £ 296:2:13. The Court approves the showing, and orders a distribution, appointing as distributors Edmon Lewiss and deacon John Robert Walker. The widow is to receive one-third of the moveables, and the use of one-third of the realty for life. The two eldest daughters, having married and received their portions, are barred out from the distribution. The eldest son, David, will have a double share, "and the rest of the children equall and single portions of the said estate."

Under the above order the distribution was accomplished April 10th, 1725.†

* Probate Records at Fairfield.

† Probate Records at Fairfield.

CHILDREN AND GRANDCHILDREN OF DAVID
DE FOREST.

48. 1728, May 28. Henry De forest chooses for guardian Sam^l Blagg, who gives bonds in £ 100.

1732/3, January 7, Benjamin Deforeest, son of David Deforeest Dec'd, chooses for guardian his brother David Defreest, who gives bonds in £100.

1748, April 18. Inventory of the estate of Mr. David Deforest, of Wilton Parrish in Norwalk, lately Dec'd (son of David of Stratford). Home lot, £ 780; house, £ 400; barn, £ 30; lot of 45 acres, £ 990; lot of 68 acres, £ 272; lot of six acres, £ 48; two oxen and 31 sheep, £ 335; pigs and swine, £ 31; horses and cattle, £ 549; money in old currency, £ 79; best sword, £ 2; poor sword, £ 1: 10. The above items foot up £ 3497: 10; the entire list might amount to £ 4000. Apparently the appraisal is in "old currency," worth perhaps 12 or 15 per cent of face value.*

1761, Apr. 21. Inventory of estate of Mr. Elnathan Wheeler, late of Stratford (who married Martha De Forest Dec. 8, 1726). The total is £ 1619: 11: 1.

1780, May 12. Inventory of estate of Josiah Marven, late of Norwalk. Stamford land, 110 acres, £ 495; Wampum Hill land, £ 132; other tracts, £ 204; total land, £ 831. Many chattels, including cattle; apparently a large estate. Widow named

* No church records at Wilton dated earlier than 1733. David De Forest first mentioned June 1st, 1740, when his daughter Martha was baptised. No record of his death. In 1749 his son Hezekiah and wife Rebecca belonged to the church; also, in 1755, his son David and wife Sarah Olmstead.

Sarah, obviously a second wife, if this is the Josiah Marven who married Elizabeth De Forest in 1734.

1780, Nov. 16. Appraisal of estate of Abigail (Peat) De Forest, widow of Samuel De Forest of Monroe. Total, £980 : 1 : 11. Executor, Nehemiah De Forrest, (son of dec'd).

1782, July 1. Appraisal of estate of Mr. Edward Deforrest, late of Stratford; his executor, Elisha Deforest. A copious list, not footed up, but evidently a good estate. One item is "hard cash, £20." The testator signed his will "Edward Deforeest."

1788, March 1. Inventory of estate of David De Forest Jun^r, of Norwalk (great grandson of David 1st). Total, £232 : 3 : 1.

1790, Sept. 15. Inventory of estate of David Deforest, late of Norwalk (father of the last.) Total, £212 : 9 : 10; a few pounds added later. Heirs, Samuel, Isaac, Eliud, Clark, and the children of the above David jun^r.

CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH REGISTERS OF HUNTINGTON, CT.

49. *Business Book*. (This volume, which is incomplete, opens in December, 1727, and records such parochial affairs as the election of officers, the imposition and collection of rates, etc.)

1745, December 2. Samuel Deforest and Edmond Lewis are appointed a committee "to take care of the schole at Mosshill."

Benjamin De Forest jun^r appears as church clerk from Dec. 6, 1746, to May 20, 1782. He signs indifferently Deforest, or De Forest, clerk.

Othniel De Forest (or Deforest) appears as church clerk from 1785 to 1790.

50. Marriages. On the fly-leaf appears this indignant entry: "These records begin Octobr 27, 1773. The Records of the Church of Christ in Rip-ton are not to be found from the beginning of the Church in this place untill these Records Begin." The list of marriages commences Nov. 18, 1773, giving one for that year and six for 1774. As the marriage of Benjamin De Forest and Mehetable Curtiss took place early in 1773, there is no entry of it. The marriage of David C. De Forest of Buenos Ayres to Julia Wooster of Huntington is dated Oct. 6, 1811.

Baptisms. 1774, March 6, David Curtiss, infant son of Benjamin De Forest jun. and Mehetable his Wife.

1776, June 2. John Hancock, son of Benj. & Mehetable De Forest.

1778, July 20, William, (died June 18, 1802, at Watertown, Ct.).

1780, July 2, Benjamin son of Benjamin & Mehetabel De Forest.

1782, Aug. 25, Ezra, child of Benj. & Mehitabel De Forest.

1784, Nov. 22, Mehetable; posthumous, died Jan. 21, 1809, at Watertown.

Professions of Faith, 1779, Nov. 14, received into full Communion, Benjamin De Forest Jun, & Mehitabel wife of Benjamin De Foreest Jun.

1780, May 7. Isaac de Forest received.

Deaths.

1780 April 17, Benjamin De Forest, Died, Age 65

1784. August 1, Benjamin De Forest, " " 35

The following additional deaths appear on a monument in the Cong. churchyard:—Esther, wife of Benj. De Forest (1st) March 22, 1763, in her fortieth year; a second wife, Sarah, Aug. 19, 1780; Mehitable, wife of Benjamin 2d, May 7th, 1830, in her 79th year; Ezra, son of Benjamin, 2d, Feb. 6, 1868, aged 86; his wife, Laura Wooster, January 9, 1863, aged 73 yrs, 7 months; his son, David W. at Jacksonville, Fla., aged 29 years, six months; his son, Benjamin C, May 6, 1862, aged 48 yrs. and 3 months.

PROBATE RECORDS AT BRIDGEPORT, CT.

51. Will of Benj. De Forest, 2d. He names his wife Mehitable and his brother Othniel as his executors. His wife will receive the equal of his house and barn, with all his lands, so long as she remains his widow. His children will inherit, in equal portions, all remainder of estate; their names are David Curtiss, John Hancock, William, Benjamin, and Ezra De Forest. The will is dated July 30th, 1784; the testator signs "Benjamin Deforest."

Appraisal dated July 25, 1789. The first distribution is dated March 27, 1793. Among the assets appear "two rights of land in Ripton, Addison county, Vermont," valued at £ 50. The estate, which in 1785 was appraised at £ 961: 19, had fallen to £ 376: 19.

PART IV.

DESCENDANTS OF ISAAC DE FOREST : THE NEW YORK BRANCHES.*

52. The eldest adult son of Isaac de Forest (son of Jesse de F. and Marie du Cloux) was Johannes, educated as a surgeon, who married, June 8, 1673, Susannah dau. of Nicholas Verlet. His only child who reached maturity was Susannah, born in 1676, who married Robert Hickman in 1703.

THE ALBANY BRANCH† was founded by Philip de Forest (son of Isaac) who m. Jan. 5, 1676, Trintie, dau. of Hendrick Kip of New York, and was buried in Albany, Aug. 18, 1727. Children: Sara, bp. in New York, Jan. 2, 1678; Susanna, bp. in Albany, Apr. 1, 1684; Metje, July 25, 1686; Isaac, Feb. 20, 1689; Jesse, Jan. 13, 1692; Catrina, Nov. 25, 1694; Johannes, Sept. 12, 1697; David, Sept. 8, 1700; Abraham, Feb. 21, 1703.

David, of 1700, m. Abigail Van Aalsteyn, Nov. 8, 1718. Chn.: Philip, bp. Feb. 21, 1719; Philip, May 1, 1720; Jannetie, March 11, 1722; Martin, May 14, 1724; Catharina, Sept. 15, 1728; Susanna, Sept. 26, 1731; Maria, Apr. 21, 1734; Jacob, March 3, 1737.

* I have not attempted to produce a full genealogical list of the American De Forests, but merely to indicate the original and the more numerous branches.

† For the Albany branch I trust to Jonathan Pearson's *First Albany Settlers*, Albany, 1872, J. Munsell (no copyright date).

Jesse, of 1692, m. Neeltie Quackenbos, Aug. 22, 1618; he was buried Sept. 27, 1756. Chn.: Catryna, bp. May 31, 1719; Philip, Oct. 14, 1720; Cornelia, Feb. 20, 1723; Wouter, Nov. 14, 1725; Isaac, Sept. 29, 1728; Catharina, May 20, 1731; Neeltie, Oct. 21, 1733; Sarah, Aug. 8, 1736; Marytie, March 16, 1740.

Johannes, of 1697, m. Marie Quackenbosch, Oct. 12, 1725; he was buried June 13, 1754. Chn.: Catharina, bp. June 4, 1727; Wouter, Nov. 17, 1728; Cornelia, Sept. 7, 1729; Cornelia, Nov. 1, 1730; Philip, Nov. 7, 1731; Philip, Dec. 24, 1732; Philip, Dec. 21, 1733; Wouter, Nov. 26, 1735; Philip, March 13, 1737; Sara, June 4, 1738; Johannes, Nov. 11, 1739; Johannes, March 15, 1741.

Abraham, of 1703, m. Rebecca Symonse Van Antwerpen, March 27, 1732. Chn.: Catharina, bp. March 11, 1733; Maria, May 23, 1736; Symon, Feb. 17, 1739; Sarah, Feb. 14, 1742; Cathalyne, Dec. 14, 1743; Sara, Aug. 5, 1750; Rebecca, July 24, 1757.

Philip jr. m. Maria Bloemendal, May 4, 1745. Chn.: David, bp. June 7, 1747; Johannes, Aug. 18, 1751; Rebecca, July 22, 1753.

Philip, jr. (of 1720?) m. Rachel Van Ness. Chn.: Catarine, bp. May 28, 1749; Catalina, Dec. 8, 1751; Jesse, June 30, 1754; Jesse, Aug. 22, 1756; Neeltie, Oct. 1, 1758; Annatie, Feb. 22, 1761.

Marten, of 1724, and his two brothers, Philip and Jacob, lived on adjoining farms in what is now North Greenbush. He married Tanneke Winne. Chn.: Catryna, bp. Sept. 15, 1751; Peter, Apr. 15, 1753; David, Sept. 21, 1755; Philippus, Jan. 15, 1758; Willem, Apr. 13, 1760; Catharina, May 6, 1762; Rachel, born March 23, 1764; Jannetie, b. Sept. 14,

1766; Marytie, Jan. 29, 1769; Jacob, May 28, 1771; Daniel, Aug. 4, 1774.

Wouter (of 1725?) m. first Engeltie Bratt, Sept. 14, 1754. Chn.: Jesse, bp. Nov. 24, 1754, Dirk, Feb. 6, 1757. He m. second Alida Clute, Aug. 20, 1763. Chn.: Johannes, born Apr. 1, 1765; Philip, b. July 9, 1767; Annatie, Apr. 26, 1769; Annatie, Aug. 14, 1770; Isaac, Aug. 17, 1772; Neeltie, Jan. 15, 1774; Johannes, April 5, 1776.

Isaac (of 1728?) m. Alida Fonda, Apr. 14, 1753. Chn.: Neeltie, bp. Aug. 24, 1755; Jesse, bp. June 25, 1759; Jesse, born May 25, 1762; Alida, b. Aug. 21, 1765; Maria, b. Apr. 19, 1769.

Jacob (brother of Marten?) m. Tryntie Bratt, July 24, 1756. Chn.: David, bp. Aug. 13, 1758; Abigail, born Apr. 4, 1762; Dirk, b. June 10, 1764; Pieter Bratt, b. Sept. 3, 1766; Catharina, Apr. 13, 1768; Johannes, March 1, 1771; Jacob, Apr. 1, 1773; Engeltie, June 5, 1776.

Simon, of "Halve Maan," m. Mary McGinnis, June 5, 1761. Chn.: Rebecca, born July 3, 1762; Sara, b. March 15, 1764; Annatie, b. July 23, 1767; Dorothea, b. July 29, 1771.

Philip, m. Maayke Van den Bergh. Ch.: Rachel, b. Dec. 23, 1769.

David, of "Colonie," m. Elizabeth Witbeck, May 26, 1770. Chn.: Philippus, b. March 7, 1771; Lucas, March 25, 1773; Maria, March 20, 1775; Geertruy, Dec. 13, 1778; Rebecca, Aug. 8, 1782; Abraham Witbeck, Sept. 30, 1786; John, July 25, 1789.

Pieter, of "Colonie," m. Pietertie Van Aalsteyn, June 4, 1775. Chn.: Cathalina, b. July 4, 1776;

Marten, Nov. 29, 1778; Reinier, July 8, 1781; Cathalyntie, bp. May 27, 1786; Tanneke, b. May 12, 1790.

Philip m. Annatie Van Deusen, June 7, 1778. Chn.: Marten, b. July 23, 1779; Christiana, Aug. 24, 1781; Wilhelmus, Sept. 22, 1784; Tanneke, Jan. 7, 1787. (Philip W. De Forest d. Aug. 19, 1800, act. 42 yrs., 1 month, 9 days.)

Jesse m. Rebecca Van Santen, Aug. 1, 1779. Chn.: Wouter, b. Nov. 21, 1780; Engeltie, Feb. 12, 1785; Maria, Nov. 1, 1786; Dirk, March 2, 1788; Hetty, Oct. 12, 1789; Catalina, Aug. 12, 1795.

Johannes m. Elbertie Van Aalsteyn. Ch.: Philip, b. Feb. 21, 1780; David, July 6, 1783.

Dirk m. Rebecca Bratt, Jan. 14, 1781. Chn.: Teunis, b. July 24, 1781; Wouter, Nov. 23, 1783; Engeltie, Apr. 22, 1785; Cathalyntie, May 10, 1788; Henry, Nov. 27, 1797; Walter, June 10, 1800.

David (son of Marten) m. Rachel Van der Heyden, Feb. 27, 1780. Chn.: Janneke, b. May 12, 1782; Johannes, May 18, 1785, d. in 1857. (David De Forest d. April, 1835.)

William m. Abigail (De) Foreest, March 16, 1783. Ch.: Marten, b. Sept. 1, 1784.

David m. Susanna Fonda, Dec. 25, 1779. Chn.: Wouter, b. March 31, 1787; Pieter, July 25, 1789; Abraham, Oct. 20, 1790; Stephen, Jan. 5, 1801.

Dirk and Maria Fonda. Chn.: John, b. Nov. 17, 1787; David, Dec. 26, 1790.

John J. and Barbara Van Aalsteyn. Ch.: John, b. Aug. 27, 1791.

THE NEW YORK CITY BRANCH* was founded by Isaac (son of Isaac) who m. Sept. 4, 1681, Elizabeth dau. of Lawrence Van der Spiegel. His children were Johannes, b. 1684; Sarah, 1686; Margaret, 1689; Maria, 1694; Elizabeth, 1697. Sarah m. John Myer; Margaret m. Harman Rutgers; Elizabeth m. Rev. Antonius Curtenius of Hackensack.

Johannes m. June 23, 1705, Catherine dau. of Gerrit Van Ravenstein, and resided in New York till his death, July 30, 1757. His will, dated Dec. 25, 1746, mentions the following children: Isaac, b. 1705; Nicholas, 1710; Johannes, 1711; Maria, 1718; Lawrence, 1720; Gerrit, 1723; Elizabeth, 1725. Maria m. Gerrit Waldron; Lawrence, in 1744, m. Sarah, dau. of Mansfield Tucker, and had a son Mansfield, perhaps others; Nicholas, in 1736, m. Maria Barker, and had a son John who m. Jane Albouy, also a son Bernard who m. Martha Albouy.

Johannes, son of Johannes and Cath. Van Ravenstein, was probably father of Theodorus who in 1778 m. Mary Doughty and had, John b. Aug. 11, 1780; Mary, Dec. 22, 1782; Theodorus, May 11, 1786.

Isaac, son of the above Johannes and Cath. Van Ravenstein, removed to Adamsville, Somerset Co., N. J., though descendants settled in New York City. He m. Maria Brokaw and had chn.: Maria, b. 1740; John, July 28, 1743; Catharine, 1745; Abraham, 1749. Of these, John m. Maria Van Nest, and died in 1825, leaving chn.: Isaac, b. March 3, 1764; Catharine, Jan. 17, 1766, d. Nov. 19, 1846; Abraham, Apr. 2, 1774; Lawrence Vandever, May 11, 1782; John, May 8, 1784. This John m. Surviah Whitehead, and

* Drawn from Riker's Hist. of Harlem, p. 572.

died Nov. 16, 1864, leaving as his only child, Isaac De Forest, formerly of No. 2, Old Slip.

Abraham, of 1774, m. Catharine Fulkerson, and died Aug. 30, 1830, aged 57, leaving chn.: Richard and Maria. His brother Isaac m. Kneertie Wortman, and died March 13, 1808, leaving chn.: Peter, John I, Maria, Sarah, Catharine and Margaret.

Lawrence-Vandever, of 1782, merchant in New York, m. Jane Davis of Somerville, N. J., and died May 7, 1858, leaving chn.: Theodore Romaine De Forest, John Abeel De Forest, and Jane Lawrence De Forest (wife of Doctor — Hull.)

Gerrit (or Gerardus), of 1723, m. in 1744 Sarah Hardenbrook, and had chn.: John, born 1745; Andrew 1751; Gerardus, 1753; Theodorus, 1756. Theodorus in 1779 m. Susannah Leggett. Gerardus m. Rachel Kingsland, and left sons, John, Gerardus and David, besides seven daughters, of whom the eldest, Sarah, m. Hugh Fairly.

THE LONG ISLAND BRANCH* was founded by Hendrick De Forest (son of Isaac), who m. June 5, 1682, Fiammettia (or Phoebe) Van Flaesbeek, and settled on Long Island, first at Bushwick, then at Madman's Neck. His children were: Barent (or Barnet) b. 1684; Sarah, 1686; Gerrit, 1689; Henricus, 1691; Susannah, 1693; Phoebe, 1695; Maria, 1696; Jesse, 1698. Susannah m. Abraham Koning; Phoebe m. Henry Cole. Several of the sons settled in New York; the above Henricus was there in 1747, apparently a sea-captain.

* Drawn from Riker's Hist. of Harlem, p. 573.

Barent, a school teacher, m. in 1708 Catalina Sarley, and in 1723, Elizabeth Verduin. His known children are: Henricus, b. 1712; Phoebe, 1714; Sarah, 1717; Catalina, 1720; Cornelius, 1725. Phoebe, m. Benjamin Stout; Catalina m. Hendrick Van Beuren; Cornelius m. Antie Van Winkle.

Gerrit, of 1689, m. in 1716 Cornelia Waldron, and had chn.: Sarah, b. 1719; Henry, 1722; Phoebe, about 1725; Gerrit, 1731. Sarah m. Hendrick Vandewater. Phoebe m. Andrew Gewara; Hendrick was made freeman at New York in 1770; Gerrit was a storekeeper at Fly Market in 1776.

Henricus, of 1712, married in 1734, Susannah Bill, widow of William Golding; in 1753 he was a printer in King St. now Pine. His dau. Susanna m. in 1754 Samuel Brown; his dau. Caroline m. in 1759 Richard King. There may have been other children.

Jesse, of 1698, m. June 14, 1719, Teuntie Titsoort; he dying Apr. 12, 1755; she, Sept. 3, 1761. They left chn.: Abraham, born 1722; Henricus, 1724; Margaret, 1732; she m. Capt. Wm. Long. Henricus m. Elizabeth Young, and died prior to Aug. 21, 1772. Abraham m. in 1744 Elizabeth Myer; in 1758 he went out as master at arms in the privateer Peggy; in 1760, 1761, 1762 he commanded companies on the northern frontier against the French. His wife died Apr. 6, 1761. In 1774 Capt. De Forest was a resident of Dutchess county. His chn.: Jesse, b. 1745; Elizabeth, 1746; Peter, 1748; Anna, 1752; Abraham, 1754; Henry, 1756; Cornelia, 1758; Deborah, 1759.

DESCENDANTS OF ISAAC DE FOREST: THE CONNECTICUT BRANCH.*

53. The Connecticut branch was founded by David de Forest, who settled at Stratford in 1695 and married Martha Blagge. For the births and marriages of his children see *ante*, records of Stratford.

David, eldest son of the above, m. Abigail ———? He settled at Wilton, a parish of Norwalk; its records previous to Feb. 13, 1733 have perished. In 1740, June 1st, he bapt. a daughter Martha. His will, dated 18 April, 1748, is at Fairfield, and names son Hezekiah as executor; date of death unknown. His chn. were: Hezekiah, bapt. Dec. 1726, who in 1749, with wife Rebecca, belonged to ch. of Wilton, and had a son Hezekiah bp. in 1770; Lemuel, bp. August 1728, who m. Phoebe Keeler of Norwalk; Abigail, b. Apr. 24, 1731, who m. Nov. 9, 1774, James Lockwood of Norwalk; David, bp. 1st July, 1733; Elihu; Ephraim, b. 1740, d. 1827.

Ephraim, son of David of Wilton and Abigail, m. Sarah Betts. Chn.: Nathan, b. 1765; Zalmon, 1770; Henry, 1778; Samuel, 1784; Sally, m. in Nova Scotia; Ephraim Betts, b. 1787.

Elihu, son of David of Wilton and Abigail, m. May 4th, 1761, Rachel Lambert, dau. of David Lambert and Lurania Bills. Chn.: David Lambert, b. 1762; Joseph, 1764; Lurania, 1767; Benjamin, July 16, 1771; Elizabeth, 1774; Bills Clark, 1782.

David, son of David of Wilton and Abigail, resided

* Drawn in part from Orcutt's Hist. of Stratford, 1886; Fairfield County Hist. Society (no copyright date); in part from public archives and family registers.

at Norwalk. An appraisal of estate in probate office at Fairfield, dated 15 Sept. 1790, gives as heirs Samuel, Isaac, Eliud, Clark, and the Children of a son David who died in 1788. The papers of this junior David are also at Fairfield; he is not to be confounded with David De Forest of Derby, son of Samuel.

Samuel, of Monroe, son of David of Stratford, m. Abigail Peat, Dec. 30, 1725. Chn.: Martha, b. Nov. 24, 1726; Mary, bp. Feb. 3rd, 1728-29; Joseph, b. Nov. 17, 1731; Hepziba, b. May 29, 1734. m. Milton Hawley; Elizabeth, b. March 28, 1737; Samuel, b. Nov. 18, 1739; Nehemiah, b. Jan. 24, 1743; David, b. July 9, 1745; Josiah, d. y.

Mary, dau. of Samuel and Abigail, m. Elisha Mills. Chn.: Annie, b. Dec. 31, 1751, m. 1767, Agur Judson, d. 1831; Mary, b. Nov. 28, 1753, m. 1776, Elias Beers, d. 1784; Hepsa, b. Sept. 2, 1755, m. 1777, Rev. David Ely of Huntington, d. 1803; Aurelia, b. Dec. 14, 1757, m. 1784 Joseph Darling; Abigail Elizabeth, b. May 26, 1760, m. 1783 Isaac Plummer; Sarah Apama, b. Oct. 19, 1762, m. 1783 Rev. Zebulon Ely who was graduate and tutor of Yale and pastor during 42 years at Lebanon, she d. Dec. 14, 1842; Elisha Treat, b. Jan. 17, 1765, grad. of Yale, m. Cath. Lewis; Isaac, b. March 7, 1767, grad. Yale, m. Abby Phelps; Samuel Peet, b. March 12, 1769, grad. Yale, m. Sally Tomlinson; William, b. March 8, 1771. (Furnished by a descendant, Miss Emma G. Lathrop.)

Nehemiah, son of Samuel and Abigail, m. first, Dec. 20, 1769, Mary Lockwood, who d. Oct. 17, 1790; second, he m. Aug. 28, 1793, Eleanor Hickock of Woodbury. He d. in Easton, Dec. 9, 1801. Chn.:

Abby, b. March 1771, m. Legrand M. Lewis; William, b. June 13, 1773; Lockwood, b. March 5, 1775; Polly, b. April 27, 1777, m. Samuel M. Munson; Philo, b. July 21, 1779; DeLauzun, b. June 30, 1781; Betsey, b. Jan. 16, 1785, d. unmarried. By second wife, Charles, d. y.; Charles, b. Aug. 10, 1795, d. July 28, 1865.

David, son of Samuel and Abigail, m. Hannah Lum and settled in Derby. His will, at New Haven, gives chn.: David Lum, Isaac, Samuel Hervey, Joseph, Hephsa, Eunice, Polly and Hannah. It bequeaths real estate in New Stratford, and names "brother Nehemiah" as joint executor. The above Samuel H. removed to Dover Plains, N. Y.; Joseph had sons, Isaac N., John J. and James G., of Dover Plains.

Joseph, son of Samuel and Abigail, m. Susanna Mills, Aug. 18, 1757. Chn.: Samuel, b. July 15, 1758, m. Betsy Lane; Abel, b. April 28, 1761, m. Polly dau. of Henry Hawley of New Stratford, Nov. 1787; Mills, b. May 24, 1763, removed to Orange county, Vt.; Gideon, b. Sept. 14, 1765; Sally, b. Oct. 3, 1767; Elihu, b. Feb. 6, 1771. (Records furnished by Rev. Henry S. De Forest.)

William, son of Nehemiah De F. and Mary Lockwood, m. twice. Chn.: Isaac, who m. Sarah Bartram and had Thomas B.; Lockwood N.; William, who m. Louisa A. Bassett; Marcus; Mary Ann, who m. in 1834 George St. John of Norwalk.

Lockwood, son of Nehemiah De F. and Mary Lockwood, m. in 1793 Mehetable dau. of Nathan Wheeler; resided at Monroe, Fairfield, New Haven, Bridgeport and New York. Chn.: William Wheeler, b. 1794; Mary Lockwood, 1796; Susan, 1798; Jane, 1800;

Alfred, 1802; d. y.; Frederick Lockwood, 1804, d. y.; George B., 1806; Eliza, 1808; Sarah, 1810; Anne, 1812; Louisa, 1814; Henry G., 1820; James G., 1822; Frederick L., 1825.—Mary m. Roger Sherman Skinner; Susan m. Daniel Lord; Jane m. Burr Wake-man; George B. m. Margaret De Forest dau. of Benjamin; Eliza m. Samuel Downer; Sarah m. Walter Edwards; Ann m. Simeon Baldwin; Louisa m. 1st, Samuel Woodruff, 2nd, Thomas F. Cook; Henry G. m. Julia Weeks.

De Lauzun, son of Nehemiah De Forest and Mary Lockwood, m. Lydia Brintnal; d. at New Haven; will dated Nov. 23, 1815. Chn.: Elizabeth, d. unmarried; William B.; his son named William. De Lauzun was thus named after a French officer, the duke de Lauzun, who served in America during the rev. war.

Gideon, son of Joseph and grandson of Samuel, m. Hannah Birdseye about 1794, and settled during 1795 in Otsego Co., N. Y. He and his three brothers, Samuel, Abel and Mills, were soldiers of the revolution. His chn. were Abel Birdseye, b. Dec. 30, 1795; Lee, Aug. 7, 1798; Sally, March 9, 1800, m. Alonzo S. Campbell of Columbus, Ohio; Cyrus Hawiey, March 30, 1804 (d. March 7, 1888), resident of Buffalo; Maria, July 20, 1806, m. Rev. Henry Snyder; Charles Augustus, Oct. 25, 1808, resident of Albany; Tracy Robinson, Feb. 2, 1811, of Cleveland, Ohio; Harriet, July 28, 1813, m. Thomas A. Fuller.

Lee, son of the above Gideon, m. Feb. 6, 1828, Cynthia Storrs Swift of Mansfield, Connecticut. Chn.: George Lee, b. July 28, 1829; Charles Mills, March 1, 1831, d. 1848; Henry Swift, March 17, 1833; Helen Maria, July 1, 1835; Edward Tracy, May 21,

1839, d. 1850; Harriet Eliza, July 25, 1847; all born at South Edmeston, Otsego Co., N. Y.

Henry Swift, son of Lec, m. Aug. 25, 1869, Anna M. Robbins, dau. of Rev. A. B. Robbins, D.D. Chn.: May Robbins; Lee; Charles Mills.—Rev. H. S. De F. was chaplain 11th Regt. Conn. Vols. during the civil war, and since 1879 president of Talladega College, Alabama; dec'd.

Tracy Robinson, son of Gideon De F. and Hannah Birdseye, m. May 22, 1833, Julia Ann Sutherland of Black Rock, N. Y., and in 1834, removed to Cleveland, Ohio, dying there Nov. 11, 1887. Chn.: Henry, d. y.; Cyrus Henry, b. May 30, 1835; Louis Germain, Sept. 9, 1838; Julia A., Oct. 27, 1840; Charles Lee, Sept. 15, 1844; Maria L., July 12, 1847; Albert Wright, Aug. 3, 1849; Mary Frances, June 27, 1853.

Cyrus Henry, son of Tracy Robinson De F., served during four years of the civil war as lieutenant of infantry and capt. of Colorado cavalry, breveted as major. His brother Louis Germain served in Ohio regiments as 1st lieutenant, adjutant and captain, dying in 1870 from results of service; he m. Dec. 26, 1861, Teresa Suydam; chn.: Albert Tracy, Edward Ingersoll, Louis Curtis.

Edward, son of David of Stratford, m. June 1733 Eunice dau. of Samuel Uffoot (Ufford). Chn.: Zerūiah, b. June 20, 1734, d. 1754; Isaac, b. July 8, 1736, had a son Benjamin; Elisha, bapt. July, 1738, d. 1804; Eunice, b. Sept. 2, 1739; Martha, Nov. 22, 1741; Edward, March 2, 1743; John, Aug. 20, 1745; Sarah, Feb. 2, 1747-48; Ann, Jan. 28, 1749-50, m. Thomas Curtis ancestor of Miss Mary Alice Curtis of Strat-

ford; * William, b. June 17, 1752; Mary, March 9, 1755; Joseph, 1758.

Elisha, son of Edward De F. and Eunice Uffoot, m. Oct. 28, 1767, Sarah, dau. of Richard Hubbell. Chn.: Isaac, b. Sept. 23, 1768; Daniel, June 4, 1771, m. Phoebe Offoot; Sarah, b. Aug. 26, 1774, m. Russell Edwards, April, 1794; Mary, b. July 28, 1777; "Son," bp. Feb. 1779; Eunice, b. Feb. 1780; Mary, b. Jan. 23, 1782; Alice, b. Feb. 20, 1784.

Joseph, son of Edward De F. and Eunice Uffoot, m. March 31, 1779, Anne Lamson. Chn.: Anne, Feb. 5, 1780; Elizabeth, June 10, 1783; Charity, April 25, 1785; William, Nov. 20, 1786; Philo (?), May 25, 1788; Sarah, June, 1789; Mitchell Lamson, Feb. 1792.

John, son of Edward De F. and Eunice Uffoot, settled in Woodbury, where he m. Abigail Walker, desc. of Rev. Zacharia Walker, of said place. Chn.: Curtis, Philo, John, Edward, James, and three daughters, the youngest being Anna Maria. Curtis has no living male descendants; Philo has a grandson John in Fair Haven, and a grandson George in Oswego, N. Y. John and Edward had no sons. Anna Maria, b. 1788, d. 1870, was grandmother of Mrs. Mary A. (Betts) Bristol, N. Y. City.

Henry, son of David of Stratford, m. in 1746 Martha ——? Chn.: Huldah, b. Sept. 14, 1747; Henry, March 15, 1750; Timothy, Dec. 8, 1751; Daniel, Apr. 15, 1755.

Benjamin, son of David of Stratford, m. April 18, 1744, Esther Beardsley. Chn.: Hezekiah, b. Dec. 14,

* She also descends in female line from Elisha, son of the above Edward De F. and Eunice Uffoot.

1745; Nehemiah, April 1, 1748; Benjamin, Dec. 28, 1749; Catherine, March 18, 1753; Esther, May 29, 1755; Isaac, Dec. 16, 1758; Othniel, April 10, 1761.—Catherine m. Samuel Mallett; Esther m. Samuel Thompson and removed to Litchfield.

Isaac De Forest, son of Benj. De F. and Esther Beardsley, m. Mary Gregory and settled at Livonia, Livingstone Co., N. Y., dying there Jan. 24, 1813, she July 20, 1833. Sons, Aaron, Grandison, Isaac and Samuel d. without issue; two dau. m. — White and — Hovey. Son, Alonzo m. Sarah Milliman, Sept. 8, 1803; 2d, Electa Hawks, May 8, 1821; he d. Sept. 8, 1845, æ. 64. Had sons, Benj. G. b. July 16, 1806; Ezekiel M. b. May 20, 1808; Samuel T., Apr. 27, 1811, living 1900; Aaron G., March 7, 1814.

Benj. G. De F. d. Nov. 17, 1886; buried, with wife and dau. near Climax, Kalamazoo Co. —. Ezekiel M. m. Sarah A. Tolman in 1851, and d. March 8, 1865, at Ann Arbor, Mich., leaving son Theodore Jameson, alive there in 1900.—Sam^l T. De F. m. Loraine Barton, Mar. 26, 1846. Children, Charles Sam^l, b. Dec. 16, 1846, d. y.; Frank Barton, Oct. 16, 1849; Benj. La Vergne, July 30, 1852.—Frank Barton De F. m. Ella Howard, March 28, 1877; five children living. Benj. La Vergne, m. Effie E. Epperson, July 3d, 1883; dau. Blanche living.

Aaron G. (son of Alonzo) m. Mary C. Beman in 1840; living at Ann Arbor in 1900, æ. 86; a dau., Sarah Gregory, m. Charles B. Chapin.—Theodore J. De Forest (son of Ezekiel M.), b. July 7, 1852, m. Carrie A. Sutton, dau. of Hon. Geo. Sutton, Feb. 10, 1881; four chn., Sutton, Theodore Raymond, Georgiana Catherine, Carl Benjamin, living in 1900.

Hezekiah, son of Benj. De F. and Esther Beardsley, m. Mary Adams and died in Ripton, now Huntington. Chn.: Charity, b. 1775; Augustus, bp. 1777; Erastus, 1777; Philomela, 1780; Philo, 1783; Samuel Adams, 1792, m. Polly Beers.

Nehemiah, son of Benj. De F. and Esther Beardsley, m. Rebecca Blakeman. Chn.: Betsey, b. 1777; Ebenezer, 1780; Angevina, 1784.

Othniel, youngest son of Benj. De F. and Esther Beardsley, m. Hannah dau. of Beach Tomlinson of Huntington, July 18, 1784; he died Feb. 18, 1811. Chn.: Nancy, b. March 31, 1786, m. Rev. Jason Allen; Linson, b. Aug. 13, 1787; Sidney, d. unmarried; Maria, b. April 8, 1790, m. Hezekiah Rudd; Charles, b. March 1, 1794. . . . The above Linson m. Sept. 8, 1807, Jane dau. of Cyrus Hawley of Monroe, and died in May 1822, leaving son Charles, also dau. Mary Jane, who m. Edward Shelton of Birmingham, Conn. Of this branch are Miss Jane De F. Shelton of Birmingham, and Mr. E. Shelton Cornell of New Haven. . . . The above Charles De Forest sen. (son of Othniel) m. Catherine Burlock sister of Mary Burlock, who m. Benj. De Forest of New York City; his sons were Charles B., b. 1819; Benjamin, 1821; Alfred, 1822; Othniel, 1826; David, 1828; Thomas B., 1832; William, 1837; Linson, 1839.

Benjamin, 3rd son of Benj. De Forest and Esther Beardsley, m. in 1773 Mehetable Curtis, and d. Aug. 1, 1784 in Huntington. Chn.: David Curtiss, bp. March 6, 1774; John Hancock, June 2, 1776; William, July 20, 1778, d. 1802; Benjamin, July 2, 1780; Ezra, Aug. 25, 1782; Mehetable, posthumus, d. 1796.

David C., son of Benj. De Forest and Mehetable Curtis, m. Oct. 6, 1811, Julia Wooster of Huntington. His chn., all born in Buenos Ayres, South America, were: Francisca Tomasa Isabel, bp. July 26, 1812, who m. John B. Van Ness; Juliana N., who m. Frederick Hill of Catskill, N. Y.; Carlos Maria, who m. Margaret Watkins; Pastora Jacoba, bp. Dec. 30, 1815, who m. Alexander Griffin of New York; and David C., who d. unmarried. Carlos Maria, dec'd, has a son David living in Troy, Bradford Co., Pa.

John H., son of Benj. De Forest and Mehetable Curtis, m. Dec. 4, 1811, Datha Woodward of Watertown, and d. at Seymour, Feb. 12, 1839. Chn. who reached maturity: George F., b. Sept. 14, 1812, d. Sept. 16, 1883, married, living issue; Henry A., b. May 15, 1814, d. Nov. 24, 1858, m., no issue; Andrew W., b. Feb. 23, 1817, m., living issue; John W., b. March 31, 1826, m., living issue.*

Benjamin, son of Benj. De Forest and Mehetable Curtis, m. June 16, 1805, Alma Southmayd of Watertown, and d. March 23, 1848. Chn.: John, b. March 31, 1806; Mehetable, June 30, 1809; Samuel S., Jan. 13, 1811; Alma, May 28, 1813; Benjamin and Philomela, twins, 1818. Samuel m. but died without issue; Benjamin d. unmarried Oct. 28, 1881; Philomela d. unmarried. . . . John, eldest son, m. May 16, 1841, Lucy S. Lyman of Litchfield; he d. March 11, 1885, leaving one child, Erastus Lyman De Forest, b. June 27, 1834, d. unmarried June 6, 1888. . . . Alma, eldest daughter, m. Eli Curtis of Watertown, and left four sons, Charles S., Samuel S., Benjamin De F., and John W.

* For this lineage see Munsell's American Ancestry, vol. iii.

Ezra, son of Benj. De Forest and Mehetable Curtis, m. March 21, 1808, Laura Wooster, sister to the Julia who later m. his brother David. His eldest son, David W., physician, died unmarried in Jacksonville, Fla., aged 29 years, 6 mos.; his second son, Benjamin C., died May 6, 1862, aged 48 years, 3 mos., leaving sons David and Ezra; a daughter, Catherine, m. . . . Day.

PART V.

RECORDS CONCERNING THE DE FORESTS
OF QUARTDEVILLE.

54. National Library, Paris, Cabinet des Titres, "Nouveau d'Hozier," vol. 138, dossier *Forest*, page 4.

"We Ambroise Louis Marie d'Hozier, chevalier, former president of the court of accounts, loans and finances of Normandy, former judge of arms of the nobility of France, verifier of armories,

"Certify to whom it may concern that the armories of Messire Eugene Alexander Nicolas de Forest, of Douai member of the chamber of deputies of the departments, are, *or, a lion gules holding with his fore-paws a pennon of the same; couped with azure, three martlets argent*, such as they appear in the General Armory of Flanders, t. I, p. 58, art. 53, and were determined (*reglées*) in favor of Nicolas de Forest, counsellor in the parliament of Flanders,* great-grandfather of the said Messire Nicolas, by order of the general commissioners † dated 6th Sept. 1697."

The same volume, p. 6: Extract from the baptismal registers of the parish of Notre Dame, Douai, Dept. du Nord.

"Third May, 1736, Baptized by M. Daniel François de Forest canon of St. Anne, a child born in legal wedlock of Messire Jacques Marie de Forest knight-counsellor in the court of the Parliament of

* Supreme Court of the province.

† Commissioners of heraldry.

Flanders, and of lady Louise Therese Dubois, his father and mother, residing in this parish, to which child was given the name of Jean Baptiste François Nicolas. The godfather was Messire Jean Baptiste Ignace Joseph Dubois d'Inchy, knight, lord of Wadelencourt, deputy ordinary in the Estates of Tournay and the Tournaisis, and the godmother was lady Jeanne Française Claire Cordouan, widow of Messire Nicolas de Forest knight-dean of the counsellors of the said court of Parliament."

Extract from the baptismal records of the parish of St. Jacques, at Douai, 1762.

"June 23rd, the undersigned has baptised a boy, born the preceding day in legal wedlock, of Messire J. B. François Nicolas de Forest, lord of Quartdeville, counsellor of the King in his court of the parliament of Flanders, and of lady Marie Anne Française Ingiliard; he was named Eugene Alexander Nicolas. —The godfather was Messire Eugene Marie Ingiliard, knight, lord of Wattines and other places, deputy ordinary of the Estates and province of Lille, knight of the royal and military order of St. Louis, ancient lieutenant colonel of the cavalry regiment of Bourgogne, maternal grandfather of the infant. The godmother was lady Lucie Therese Dubois de Hernes, lady of La Faillerie, spouse of Messire Jacques Nicolas Marie de Forest, knight, lord of Leuwarde, Bailleur and other places, counsellor of the King in his Counsels, president à mortier (chief justice) in the parliament of Flanders, grandmother paternal of the infant."

REGNAULD, priest
of the Oratory, and curate."

National Library, Paris. Printed Records. *Revue Historique, Biographique, etc.* ; 9th year, 2nd series, 3rd volume, 1855. Necrological notice of M. de Forest de Quartdeville, deputy of the Nord, peer of France, first president of the royal court of Douai, commander of the Legion of Honor, etc., etc.

“ M. de Forest de Quartdeville (Eugene Alexander Nicolas) was born at Douai in 1762. The de Forest family originated in Avesnes, and dates from the end of the XVth century.* The civic records show that Philippe de Forest, ancient mayor of Avesnes, died there March 29th, 1650, leaving two sons, Nicolas and Antoine.

“ The first was father of Nicolas de Forest who took oath as advocate at the court of the Parliament of Tournai 22nd June, 1691, was nominated by royal letters patent (28 Oct. 1695) counsellor in the same parliament, and died at Douai 21st Dec. 1730, while dean of the counsellors. He had six children, all the juniors in church orders.

“ The eldest, Jacques Nicolas Marie de Forest de Quartdeville, admitted as advocate to the Parliament of Flanders in 1722, was nominated successively counsellor in place of his father (1731), president à mortier (1751), and died in 1770, leaving but one child, who was :

“ Messire Jean Baptiste François Nicolas de Forest, lord (seigneur) of Quartdeville, Lewarde, etc. In parliament in 1758, dean of the presidents à mortier, he died 11 Nivose, an V (31st Dec. 1796.) He mar-

* Gilles de Forest, receiver of taxes at Avesnes from 1494, St. John's day, to 1509 same date. What did M. d'Urganges mean by the XVth century?

ried in 1761 Marie Anne Françoise Ingiliard daughter of Eugene Marie Ingiliard, knight, lord of Wattines, by Marie Anne Desbuissons (native of Bretagne), and had six children, of whom the eldest is the subject of this notice.

He married in 1788 the daughter (Philomene) of the count (Julien Louis) de la Grandville of an ancient family of Bretagne; she died in 1801, leaving him four daughters and a niece; this last married the Count de Franqueville de Bourlon.

Monsieur de Forest de Quartdeville died the 16th August 1839. His arms were :
Coupé ; first, or, a lion gules bearing a pennon gules ; second, azure, three martlets argent.

(Signed) D'URGANGES.

Annuaire de la Noblesse (Bachelier-Deflorenne) 1873. Forest de Quatreuille. Marie Philomene, dowager of Marc Remy de Rombault, of Douai, at the chateau of Lewarde, daughters; 1st, Celine, married to Victor Imbert de la Phaleque; 2nd, Elise, married to Oscar Becquet de Megille. Arms; Gold, a lion gules holding with his forepaws a pennon of the same; couped with azure, three martlets argent.

National Library. *Titres Domaniaux, Dept. du Nord*. Records concerning the city and hospital of Avesnes, dating from 1600 to 1709, give the names of various de Forests, covering apparently three generations. There are two Philippes, a Giles, a Nicolas and a Simon, but no Antony. All of them were at times managers of the hospital funds, or in some way connected with the city finances. It is impossible to

make out how they were related to each other, or to the branches of Quartdeville or of America. One guesses that the earliest of the two Philippes (deceased previous to 1666) was identical with the Philippe who lived at the Little Market in 1625, and son of the Phles, or Philippus, who bought the "Green Valley." (See ante, App. par. 8.) It is probable that he was the father of that Nicolas who removed to Tournai and established the branch of de Forest de Quartdeville.

These records show a Nicolas de Forest who did not emigrate. He appears in 1666, 1678 and 1680; then, in 1690 and 1691, comes his widow. Was this the Nicolas who married Marie Motte, resided in 1625 at the Little Market, and had four sons born between 1626 and 1635? We may fairly assume it; but where is the Nicolas of Tournai?

As a specimen of these later records of Avesnes I copy the following:—"Jaques Francquart, provost of the city of Avesnes, Philippe and Nicolas La Sur, Philippe and Gilles de Forest, and Jean Le Vignon, residing in the city of Avesnes, acknowledge having received from the prince de Chimay 4,375 florins for the purchase of a rental due to the abbey of Liessies; 16th, 7^{br}, 1709."

Of the above names Francquart and La Sur were connected by marriage with the de Forests. Another name thus connected is that of Jean Marin, who appears in a receipt of the 19th January, 1606, as Mayor, and who was probably a relative of Adrienne Marin, wife of Baltazar de Forest son of Melchior 3rd.

PART VI.

GENEALOGICAL NOTE.

MISCELLANEOUS EUROPEAN DE FORESTS, DU FORESTS, DE LA FORESTS AND FORESTS.

Not one of the families here mentioned appears to be related to the de Forests of Avesnes and the United States. Their records are introduced, partly to show what has been done toward ferreting out our European origins, partly to aid and guide future investigators of the subject. Negative results have their use as well as positive results.

The list opens with the de Forests of the three crescents, an ancient knightly race whose principal manor lay at Forest in Cambresis, about three miles from Le Cateau and eighteen miles from Avesnes. Jean Le Carpentier, already quoted and criticised, gives a rather extended account of this family, carrying it back to one Herbertus de Foresto of the first crusade, and suggesting its descent from the illustrious house de Trith. As his story can be consulted at the Astor library, I shall pass it aside and quote from less accessible sources, mostly in manuscript.*

I propose to show first that Le Carpentier was probably mistaken in assuming that the above named de Forests formed one unbroken lineage from 1096 to 1572, or thereabout. At all events, their village of

* Mostly sought out and copied for me by M. Leon Pajot, archiviste paleographe, Paris.

Forest was in the hands of the Counts of Hainaut during a part of the 13th century, as appears in the following briefs from the State Archives at Mons in Belgium.*

List of rents due to the count of Hainaut in 1285, fol. 206 :—"Jehans Forés ; a *muid* of land, paying one third of the crop, by lot."

Further on, in fol. 207, in the list of those holding *courtills*, or garden-plots, at Forest, appears "Jehans Forés, a *courtill* and a half."

Once more, in fol. 211, in a list of lands at Forest donated by the countess of Hainaut to Bauduin dou Castel, one finds "Jehan Forés, in the street of Bavai ; 2 *wilews* (?) at one third part, by lot."

A *muid* was as much land as could be sown with a *muid* of grain, which might be anywhere between 300 and 730 litres, or large quarts. Probably it was meant to be an approximation to the ancient Roman farm of seven acres.

Incidentally we may query whether this humble villager, Jean Forest, was ancestor to the de Forests of the three crescents? Probably not ; they seem to have come from Aniche near Douai ; but really we know nothing certain of their origin. Or was he ancestor to the de Forests of Avesnes and America? Here is another question which it is impossible to answer, for lack of records. I now pass on to a document of unknown origin which supports Le Carpentier with what small authority it has.

* Courteously furnished by M. Leopold Devillers, the learned conservator of the State Archives. He explains that the Forest mentioned in the briefs is the village of that name near Le Cateau.

THE DE FORESTS IN CAMBRESIS.

I.

55. de Forest.* From the seigneurs de Trith descend the S^{rs} de Forest in Cambresis who bear *argent 3 crescents sable* and cry of *Trith*; from whom descends

Herbert who was at the "tournaments" of Anchin in the year 1096; from whom descends

Vuatier, sieur de Forest, who did good to the "abaye" of St. André in the year 1163; who espoused Usilie, by whom he had Guillaume, Hugues, Vuatier, Enguerran who did great good to the churches, and lies in the abbaye of Fimy in the year 1197, not married. †

Herbert, who espoused, according to a document of St. Aubin (abbey) in the year 1179, Mathilde de Viezlis, by whom he had Hugues, Gerard, Guillaume. ‡

Simon, who espoused Agnes, daughter of the Chastelain of Samson (a strong castle) in the Namurois; from whom, or from one of his brothers, descends Gilles, called by sobriquet l'Estoc, who espoused, about the year 1310, Isabeau de le Boe. (ancient form of *du Bois*.)

* Translation of document in vol. 275 of d'Hozier's *Dossiers Bleus*, Bibliothèque Nationale, Paris. Not dated, but in antique French.

† "gist en l'abbaye de Fimy," etc.

‡ Here, as the dates show, follows a gap in the main line of over a century, and perhaps fully two centuries. The first lord who is established by existing public documents is Louis (husband of Marie de Montar), who was certainly living in 1379.

Louis, S^r of Aniche, espoused Marie de Montar, by whom he had

Thomas, S^r of Aniche, who espoused Marie de Poix, daughter of Druwart, by whom he had Pierre (and Louis).*

Louis, S^r of Aniche, who by Jeanne daughter of Jeanne de Testeau (Resteau ?) had

Samson, S^r of Aniche, who espoused Marie de Lannoy, by whom he had

Marguerite, dame of Aniche, wife of Antoine de Landas.

Pierre (son of Thomas, above) espoused Marie le Boulengier, by whom he had

Jacques, who espoused Polaine de Bullecourt, by whom he had Margueritte wife of Philippe de Hertaing S^r de Monstrecourt, and Henriette wife of Antoine le Baudouin.

Jacques (son of Jacques 1st), who espoused Jeanne d'Ostinghe, secondly Madeline de Beaufremez, and had by the first

Françoise, wife of Pierre de Sable seigneur of Tazincourt (or Razincourt) and by the second he had Jeanne wife of Gerard Louchier S^r of Constantin. (Nothing further in the modern lines.)

Alix de Forest was wife of Daniel de Godin ; Colle was wife of Simon de Henchin governor of Oisy ; N— was wife of Hugues Pellicorne ; Perrette was wife of Gilles Sohier bailly of Crevecoeur.

* Henceforth there are two lines, the line of Pierre holding Forest, and the line of Louis holding Aniche, both dying out in heiresses.

II.

56. de Forest in Cambresis. (Nouveau d'Hozier.)*

Louis de Forest esquire, lord of Aniche, † (recorded in 1379) m. Marie Montar (or de Montar).

Thomas de Forest, styled Sarazin, ‡ lord of Aniche, m. Marie de Poix, bearing (*gules, a bend argent acc. by six crosses recrossed argent*). He had a daughter Marie and son Philipote, both without record; also sons Louis and Pierre who established two lineages, as follows:

Lords of Aniche.

Louis de Forest esquire (recorded in 1410 and 1437) m. Peronne le Kien, and had Marguerite, Jeanne, Jaqueline and Sanson, the first named without record. Jaqueline, dame of Crupilli (living Feb. 2, 1440) m. Mahieu Villain. Jeanne m. thrice; 1st, Jean de Rasteau; 2nd, Jean Ausel; 3rd, Nicolas Rasoir. She had a son Jean de Rasteau who m. Anne de Steipenberghe, bearing *argent, a chevron chequy or and gules*; his daughter m. Henry de Fornie, provost of Cambrai, and had Robert and two brothers.

Lords of Forest.

Pierre de Forest (recorded in 1407) m. Marie le Boulenger, and had Jaques who will follow, and Henriette who m. Antoine Baudouin.

§

Jaques de Forest, esquire (recorded in 1496) m. Apollone

* The Nouveau d'Hozier, corrected from the Dossiers Bleus, and but lately finished, is in the Bibliothèque Nationale, Paris. The dates in parenthesis are added from other authorities.

† Near Douai.

‡ Name of a manor.

§ See paragraph 60 for Messire Pierre, seigneur de Forest, knight-bachelor.

Sanson de Forest, esquire (recorded in 1437) m. Marie de Lieven, and had Marguerite dame of Aniche, who m. Antoine de Landas without issue.

de Bellecourt, and had Jaques who will follow, and Marguerite who m. Philip de Hertaing.

Jaques de Forest, m. 1st Jeanne d'Ottinghe, bearing *gules, 5 losenges argent in cross, a billette or in chief of the first canton*; 2nd, Madeleine de Beaufremez. His chn. were: Louise, in religion; Thomas, without issue; Jeanne who will follow; Françoise who m. Jean (or Pierre) de Sable lord of Razincourt and had Marie de Sable spouse of Messire Lambert de Warluzel, without issue.

Jeanne de Forest, dame of Forest, m. Gerard le Louchier lord of Constantin, and had several children.*

III.

57. de Forest in Cambresis (Brussels Ms.)† Damoiselle Baulinne de Beaumont married Jaques de Forest, esquire, bearing *argent, three crescents sable*. By her he had three children, Jaques de Forest, Margrite de Forest, Henriette de Forest.

* She had a son Jacques who signed, April 5, 1562, as "Jacques de Forest lord of Constantin" (papers preserved in the rectory at Forest); also a son, signing himself "François de Forest," who in 1572 sold the manor of Forest;—see Appendix, paragraph 60.

† Ms. no. 731 in the Goethals foundation of the royal library of Brussels, entitled Book I, containing 560 genealogies arranged and finished by R. P. Henry Bukkens, prior to the abbey of Anderburgsch of the order of St. Benoit, in the year of our Redeemer, 1628.

Jacques de Forest, esquire, married, 1st, Dame Jenne de Barbenchon, surnamed de Doustien ; 2nd, Dame Magdeleine de Beaufremz. By the first he had Françoise de Forest who married Pierre de Sable seigneur of Razincourt ; by the second, Paule Jenne de Forest who married Gerard le Louchier seigneur of Constantin.

Dame Margrite de Forest was second wife of Philippe de Hertaing son of Jacques (de Hertaing) and of Damoiselle Margrite de Boubercque widow of . . . de Baralle.

Dame Henriette de Forest married Anthoine Bau-
duin.

IV.

58. de Forest in Cambresis, bearing *argent, three crescents montant de sable, 2 in chief, 1 at point.* (Valenciennes Ms.) *

1st Generation : Louis de Forest, seigneur of Aniche, married Marie de Montar.

2nd Generation : Thomas de Forest, seigneur of Aniche, of Sarrasin, etc. married Marie de Poix, (bearing *gules à la bande d'argent accostée de six croix recroisettées et fichées de même*) daughter of Druwart de Poix and of . . .

3rd Generation : Louis de Forest, seigneur of Aniche, married Peronne le Kien, (bearing *azur à trois chiens d'or*) daughter of Simon le Kien and Jeanne de Noyers.

Pierre de Forest married Marie le Boulenger (bear-

* Ms. no. 604 : Les Généalogies de M. de Sars, of Solomon ; page 304. Bibliothèque Municipale de Valenciennes.

ing *azur à trois besans d'or, au chef de même chargé d'un aigle de sable*) daughter of . . .

4th Generation: Sanson de Forest, seigneur of Aniche, m. Marie de Lannoy (bearing, I think, *argent, à trois lions de sinople*) daughter of . . . and of . . . de Glizy, this last bearing *argent à la bande fuselée de gueules*.

Jeanne de Forest m. 1st, Jean de Resteau* (bearing *sable, à un rateau en pal d'or*) from whom sprang Jean Resteau who m. Jeanne Stepenburgh; 2nd, she m. Jean Ausel, knight of the Holy Sepulchre (bearing *d'azur à la fasce d'argent, acc. de trois lions d'or*), son of Guillaume Ausel and Marie du Parcq; 3rd, she m. Nicolas Rasoir (bearing *d'azur à trois flèches au bande d'or*). He was seigneur of Wattignies and provost of Valenciennes; he remarried with Quinte le Febure daughter of Nicolas and of Jacqueline de Wargny.

Jacques de Forest, seigneur of the said place, † m. Polaine or Pauline, de Bullecourt (bearing *d'or à la fasce de gueules, accomp. de trois maillets de sable*), daughter of Michel de Bullecourt and Marie de Rosel.

Jacqueline de Forest, living 2nd February, 1440.

5th Generation: Marguerite de Forest, dame of Aniche, m. Antoine de Landas seigneur of La Grurie

* Here is a faraway connection with the ancestors of the American de Forests. In 1633 the grandfather of Jesse, Melchior de Forest of Avesnes, married Catherine Du Fosset of Mons, whose mother was Isabeau daughter of Guillaume Resteau, bearing *sable au rateau d'or en pal*.

† "Seigneur du dit lien";—equivalent to the Scotch phrase "of that ilk." This shows that the name of these de Forests was a patronymic, and not merely an estate-name. Another genealogy (fragment) calls her Hellaine le Febure, dame de Bullecourt.

(bearing . . . *pointé fascé de dix pièces d'argent et de gueules*), son of Simon de Landas seigneur of La Grurie, and of Marguerite de Carvin his first wife.

Jacques de Forest, seigneur of the said place, married 1st, Jeanne d'Osinghem, or d'Ostinghem, (bearing . . .); 2nd, he m. Marguerite, or Madeline de Beaufremez (bearing *azur à un écusson d'argent surmonté de trois merlettes d'or*), daughter of Guy de Beaufremez and of Jeanne de Bonniers de Souastré.

Henriette de Forest m. Antoine de Bauduin seigneur of Ramillies and of Mericourt, attorney general for the crown (bearing *azur au chevron d'argent, chargé de deux lions affrontées de gueules, acc. de trois trèfles d'or*), son of Philippe de Bauduin and Marie Duquesnoy.

Marguerite de Forest m. Philippe de Hertaing, seigneur of Anvin, Montrecourt and Le Vivier, peer of Cambresis (bearing *argent à la bande d'azur chargé de trois coquilles d'or*), son of Jacques de Hertaing, seigneur of Montrecourt, and of Marie de Boubaix. This Philippe de Hertaing was widower of Ide de Baralles.

Françoise de Forest m. Antoine du Fresnoy, lieutenant of the city of Arras (bearing *argent à la fasce de gueules, chargée de trois fascés de leopard d'or*), son of . . . Epitaph at Arras: "Here lie the bodies of Antoine Du Fresnoy, esquire, and of damoiselle Françoise de Forest his wife; the year 1535."

6th Generation: Françoise de Forest m. Pierre de Chable (or Sable), seigneur of Razincourt (bearing . . .), from whom sprang Marie de Chable who m. Lambert de Warluret lord of the said place and of Betencourt, and governor of the citadel of Cambray.

Jeanne de Forest m. Enguerrand Le Louchier, seigneur of Constantin in the country of Tournaisis (bearing *sable semé de croix fichées d'or, à trois coupes couvertes de même*), son of Pierre Le Louchier, seigneur of Constantin, and of Anne de la Hamaide, (close of direct line).

Miscellaneous Notes: Jacques de Forest m. Marie de Barbançon (bearing *argent à trois lions de gueules couronnés d'or, et sur le tout une ligne de sable en barre*), daughter of Humez (Humer?) de Barbançon called Doustienne, and of Jean de Bousoit.

N . . . de Forest m. Jean de Sable, from whom sprang Marie de Sable who married Lambert de Warlusel (Warluret?).

Louis de Forest m. Antoinette de Quiéret (bearing *d'hermine à trois fleurs de lys de gueules*), daughter of Germain de Quiéret, seigneur of Werquin, and of Catherine d'Isque.

Florent de Forest m. Jenne de Roupy.

Gertrude de Forest m. Renaud d'Aspiera, seigneur of Fontaine and Les Loges (bearing *azur à trois chevrons échiquetés d'or et de gueules*), son of Renard d'Aspiera and of Mathilde de Hove.

Jeanne de Forest, dame of Hem, m. Oliver de Cuinghem, seigneur of Saily (bearing *argent à quatre chevrons de gueules*).

Alix de Forest m. Adam Godin (bearing *sinople à la coupe d'or*), son of Adam Godin, deceased at Cambray in 1315, and of Catherine de Bullecourt.

Gerard de Forest . . . ?

V.

59. de Forest in Cambresis (From de la Gorgue Rosny). *

Louis de Forest, seigneur of Aniche, m. Marie de Montar, by whom he had Thomas, surnamed Sar-rasin, lord of Aniche, who m. Marie daughter of Druart de Poix, by whom he had Louis who will follow later; also and second,

Jacques, who m. Paule de Bullecourt, by whom he had Jacques who will follow later; also Marguerite wife of Philippe de Hortaing, esquire, lord of Anvin, Le Vivier and Montrecourt; also Henriette wife of Antoine Bauduin, esquire, seigneur of Ramillies; also Françoise wife of Antoine de Fresnoy, esquire, lieutenant general of Arras.

Jacques (son of the last) m. 1st Jeanne d'Ostingue (or d'Ostinguehem), by whom he had a daughter Françoise, wife of messire Pierre de Chable seigneur of Razincourt; 2nd, he m. Marguerite de Beau-fremetz, by whom he had Thomas (without issue); also Jeanne wife of Ingueran le Louchier seigneur of Constantin; also Louise, in religion, not married; also Philippote.

Louis (son of Thomas), esquire, seigneur of Aniche, gave a receipt in 1437 stamped with a seal in red wax showing 3 crescents; he m. Peronne le Quien, daughter of Simon le Quien and of Susanne des

* Recherches Généalogiques sur les Comtés de Ponthieu, de Boulogne, des Guines, etc.; 4 vols. in 8°; 1874 & 1877; Boulogne sur Mer. Rosny seems to rely upon Dom. Lepez for the above de Forests. He copies Le Carpentier's early generations without accepting or rejecting; then proceeds as in the text above.

Noyers, by whom he had Samson who will follow later; also Jacqueline damoiselle de Crupilly; also Marguerite; also Jeanne who married thrice, 1st Jean de Resteau, 2nd Jean Autel (or Ausel), 3rd, the Sire Nicolas Razoir.

Samson de Forest, esquire, seigneur of Aniche, m. a demoiselle de Lannoy, by whom he had Marguerite dame of Aniche, wife of Antoine de Landas seigneur of La Gruerie.

60. de Forest in Cambresis. (From public documents.) * Louis Sarrasin de Forest, makes record of a fief of Solesmes, 5th of March, 1379; his seal shows three crescents in label (*trois croissants au lambel*). (From the Archives du Nord; évêché et chapitre de Cambrai.)

Thomas de Forest, surnamed Sarrasin, acknowledges holding of Guillaume of Bavaria, count of Hainaut, a fief at Forest in the provostship of Quesnoy; date 1410. An *apostille*, or marginal note, states that this fief descended to Pierret his son, then to Jacques son of the said Pierret, and that afterwards Jeanne de Forest—widow of Gerard le Louchier, seigneur of Constantin—ceded it to her eldest son François, who sold it in 1572. † (Greffé féodal de Mons; cartulaire de 1410; p. 86 V.)

Messire Pierre, seigneur de Forest, knight bachelor, serves in the company which messire Jacques, seig-

* The following records are of indisputable authenticity; they are from the Bibl. Nationale at Paris. Those marked V are in the Trésor Généalogique of Dom Villevielle.

† Jeanne had ten children; hence, perhaps, the sale. But the region was devastated in 1568 by William of Orange, and again in 1572.

neur de Heilly, knight-banneret, conducted by order of the duke of Burgundy to the aid of the duke of Brabant against the Red Duke, whereof he made showing at Chapelle in Thiérache the 3rd, 8th, 1407. (Chambre des comptes de Bourgognes : registres des montres, V.)*

Louis de Forest ; as heir to his cousin Philippa de Pois, he inherited a fief at Lourgnies in the provostship of Quesnoy, which Gerard de Pois, esquire, had recognized as holden by him of the count of Hainaut. Date 1410. (Apostille à un greffe féodal de Mons ; cartulaire de 1410 ; p. 96 V.)*

Louis de Forest acknowledges possession of a fief at Villers in Cauchie, 28th Nov. 1437. Seal : three crescents in label. (Archives du Nord ; chapitre de Ste. Croix.)*

Samson de Forest, son of the late Louis de Forest, acknowledges holding of the duke of Burgundy, † as count of Hainaut, a fief at Aniche in the chatellenie of Bouchain ; date, 1473. (Greffe féodal de Mons ; *Iiere* registre de 1473 ; p. 159, V.)

Jacques de Forest, esquire, (son of a previous Jacques and grandson of Pierre), resident of Cambrai, acknowledges holding of the duke of Burgundy, as count of Hainaut, the fief of Forest in the provostship of Quesnoy ; date, 1473. An apostille states that Gerard le Louchier (as husband of Jeanne de Forest daughter of said Jacques) afterward took census of it, in proof of sovereignty. (Greffe féodal de Mons ; *Iiere* registre de 1473 ; p. 159 ; V.)

* Pierre and Louis were sons of Thomas de Forest, surnamed Sarrasin.

† Charles the Bold, killed in 1477. Bouchain is between Douai and Valenciennes, at a considerable distance from Forest.

MISCELLANEOUS DE FORESTS IN THE DEPARTMENT
DU NORD.

CAMBRAI.

61. Ansel de Forest, knight, and Pierre Minutus, a Cambresian knight, having sold 99 church tenths to a citizen of Arras named Adam, and he having given the same to Jean de Cantimpré and his comrade Matthieu, the gift is approved by Roger bishop of Cambrai; date, 1180. (Le Glay; Glossaire Topographique de l'anc. Cambresis, p. 721.)

Pierre de Forest appears in a document of the abbey of St. Aubert, dated 1195. (Le Carpentier's Histoire du Cambresis.)

Pierre de Forest, in 1233, witnesses a gift to the abbaye of N. D. du Verger, diocese of Cambrai, by Bauduin d'Aubenchoul. (Titres sur l'Artois, Bibl. Nationale.)

Anselm de Forest, in 1245, is witness to a gift; in 1266 he witnesses a sale by Guy Pellicorne, knight, seigneur of Dury. (Le Carp.)

Ursion, seigneur de Forest, appears among the guardians of the abbey of Marciennes, with Udon de Jauche seigneur of Anich, Fastré de la Fosse and others, all appointed by the court of Hainaut. No dates, but early. (Le Carp.)

Colle de Forest was buried in the church of St. Gery au Mont des Boeufs, with her husband Simon de Henchin who was governor of Oisy in 1303. (Le Carp.)

Agnes de Forest marries Bauduin Demarets, between 1293 and 1331. (Le Carp.)

Marguerite de Forest marries Daniel de Bullecourt seigneur of Bazel and Montay ; no date. (Le Carp.)

Beatrix du Forest, "daughter of the seigneur de Forest in Cambresis," marries Guillaume Doye, esquire, captain of Busignies and Premont. (Le Carp.)

Jacquemart de Forest, resident of Cambrai, appears in 1480 as husband of "demiselle" Jacqueline Pellucorne, whose mother was a Lonsart, or Longsart. (Le Carp.)

It is impossible to say whether any of the above persons (barring Beatrix) belonged to the "de Forests in Cambresis," seigneurs of Aniche, Sarrasin, etc.

HAINAUT.*

62. Gerardus Forest (sic), between 1111 and 1120, witnessed a donation made to St. Amand-les-Puers by Clemence countess of Flanders and duchess of Lorraine. (Cartulaire of St. Amand; Bibl. Nat., Paris.)

Gerardus de Foriest (sic), in 1154, perhaps son of the above, was judge in a suit between the abbey of St. Amand and a liegeman of said abbey named Estienne. (Collection Moreau, vol. 67, fol. 56; Bibl. Nat.)

Gerardus de Forest, in 1164, the same with the above, witnessed a charter, or document, of St. Amand-en-Pévélé. (Cartulaire of St. Amand-en-Pévélé; Bibl. Nat.)

* Most of the briefs which follow are from the Bibliothèque Nationale, Paris. I am not positive as to the residence of many of these ancient de Forests.

Gerardus de Forest, the same, in 1166, witnessed a document of Philippe d'Alsace relative to the above suit between the abbey of St. Amand and its liegeman Estienne. (Collection Moreau, vol. 74, folio 236, verso.)

Gerard, sire de Forest, in August 1231, gives a sentence concerning the *gave* (feudal tax on crops) of Auberchicourt and the hosts of Samuel Calixte. Seal: *a lion passant*. (Archives du Nord; abbey of Anchin.)

Frankessins de Forest, in 1297, was present at the agreement between Jean d'Avesnes and the coiners (monnayeurs) of Valenciennes. (Cartulaire de Hainaut, vol. 1st, p. 86.)

Sandardus di Foresta, in 1260, was present at the transfer of the county of Namur, by the emperor of Constantinople, to Marguerite countess of Flanders. (Chroniques Belges; cartulaire de Namur; vol. 1st, p. 86.)

Gautier de Forest, provost of Quesnoy and bailli of Ghent, gives sentence, on the 6th January 1221, confirming the rights of the abbey of Marchiennes over Abscon in Ostrevant (now the canton of Bouchain). Seal: *a tree*.

Walter de Forest (probably the above Gautier), bailli of the counties of Flanders and Hainaut, with Otto de Trazegnies and Fastré de Ligne, sitting at Mons, 17th March 1228, adjudicates and terminates a difference concerning 99 dimes (tithes) between the abbey of Cambron and Ivon de Neuville, knight. (De Truet; cartulaire of the abbey of Cambron, p. 789.)

Matthieu de Forest, provost of Mons, acting as peer

of Hainaut, assisted at a judgment rendered, 5th June, 1369, at Mons, in favor of the abbey of St. Nicolas-aux-Bois against the demoiselle of Eth. (Archives of St. Nicolas-aux-Boys; layettes of Eth and Bry; no. 20.)

Jean de Forest, a fief-holder of the jurisdiction of Mons, receipts for 96 French crowns, the price of a purchase of land at Onnaing, 30th Oct. 1426. Arms: *a tree differenced by a star in the dexter canton.* (Archives du Nord; évêché et chapitre de Cambrai.)

Christophe de Forest, chief of the Hainauters, was beaten by the Ghenters in May, 1452. (Chronique d'Adrien de Buk.)

Christopher de Forest, 30th May 1486, is nominated by duke Maximilian (afterwards emperor) as his counsellor *scutiferum dominum nostrum.* (Chroniques Belges; cart. de St. Trond, 1st, 427.)

Monseur de Forest (Christophe?): On Monday, 4th Sept. 1503, one of the men of Robert Ruffin, coming from Flanders, announced the death of the said de Forest; whereupon Monseigneur (Philippe le Beau) expressed great regret, knowing that he had lost a good and loyal servitor.* (Chroniques Belges; voyage de Philippe le Beau.)

Bertrand de Forest, in January 1590, represents Soignies in the assembly of the Estates of Hainaut. (Archives de l'Etat, Mons.)

* This may have been Philippe de Contay, seigneur de Forest, for some years captain of the garrison of Douai, and invited to leave by the city authorities 27th July, 1493. He is generally mentioned in the records of the time by his estate-name *de Forest.*

VALENCIENNES.

63. Wautier de Forest and his wife, in August 1250, have sold three and a half conniers of land at Forest to the monastery of Chateau l'Abbaye, according to a statement by Arnoul de Mortagne chatelain of Tournai. (Le Glay; Mémoire sur les Archives de Chateau l'Abbaye; p. 171.)

Jean de Forest, esquire, surnamed Torel, is furnished, on the 19th January 1384, with powers by the following noble persons, Monseigneur Jean de Chamberly, seigneur of Wirmes and Ribemont, and the noble lady Jacqueline de Queerette his wife, to defray the cost of transporting certain possessions of said lady. (Archives de l'Abbaye de Corbie; Villevielle; Bibl. Nat.)

Statement of rents, made up in 1400, of the convent of Beaumont in the territory of Valenciennes and elsewhere:—Jean de Forest, a house, 346 florins value; later he appears in three entries as Jean de Foriest; in the final entry he rents a dwelling in conjunction with demoiselle Isabelle the widow of Jean Le Maistre. (Ms. fr. 33076, fol. 345; Bibl. Nat.)

Jean de Foriest, the son, and Guillaume Pickos styled d'Anseroit, write letters dated 8th Nov. 1428, showing that they are liegemen of the count of Hainaut, and also that Jean Le Leux, styled Yreban (?), residing in the castle of Warlaing near Lille, has renounced in favor of the dames de Beaumont his rights to certain houses at Valenciennes. (Ms. fr. 33076, no. 242; Bibl. Nat.)

Thierrî, seigneur de Forest, 17th Feb. 1416, signs a judgment of the court of Mortagne concerning the

rent of the meadow of Coraittes. Seal : *a cross held by a savage and supported by two lions in trilobe.* (Archives de Valenciennes : registre aux bourgeois ; 1421 ; Villevielle.)

Thierry, seigneur de Forest, esquire, was admitted in 1420 to the burgherhood of Valenciennes by deliberation of the aldermanic court of said city. (Archives de Valenciennes ; registre aux bourgeois ; Villevielle.)

Jacquemart de Forest, esquire, native of Forest-les-Mortagnes, was admitted in 1421 to the burgherhood of Valenciennes by deliberation of the aldermanic court of said city. (Archives de Valenciennes ; registre aux bourgeois ; Villevielle.)

Arms of du Forest, of Valenciennes and Bavay : *Argent, a bend gules, acc. by 6 quintefeuilles of the field (or 6 roues, or 6 roses).* (From a ms. pedigree in the library of Valenciennes. The arms resemble those of du Forest of Chastel-a-Roncq in the bailiwick of Lille : see par. 65.)

LILLE.

64. Gille de Forest, knight, in June 1275, declares that N. de Paleske and his daughter Marghaim have ceded to the sisters of N. D. at Lille three *conniers* and three *censes* of land which they held of him. (Messager des Sciences Historiques, 1852 ; p. 37.)

Manor of Courtisempere. Jean le Borgne, surnamed du Forest, takes census (as seigneur) of the fief of Courtisempere at Roncq, in 1380. (Chambre des comptes de Lille ; volume des nobles, p. 155 ; V.)

Messire Jean de Forest, knight, sold the fief of Courtisempere at Roncq to Jacques de le Tanerie and

his wife Ysabelle le Bir and their son Philippe, as appears in the accounts of Nicaise Monnoye, bailli of Lille, ending 22nd July 1393. (Chambre des comptes de Lille, as above.)

Messire Jean le Stoluwe, surnamed du Forest, knight, sold the *trèfonds* (bottom rights) of the fief of Courtisempere to Yvert de le Tanerie, son of Jacques de le Tanerie, receiver of Lille, as appears in the accounts of Nicaise Monnoye, bailli of Lille, ending January 12th, 1393. (Chambre des comptes de Lille.)

65. *Manor of Chastel at Roncq: Lille.* Isabeau de Forest, widow of Willaume de Forest, takes census of the fief of Chastel at Roncq, 6th March, 1372; Watier du Forest takes census, 24th August, 1381; his heir, Thierry du Forest, takes census, 8th June, 1407; Jean de Forest takes census, 12th December, 1447. (Villevielle, vol. 40.)

Alard de Forest acquired the lordship of Chastel at Roncq, according to the accounts of Hubert Gommer, bailli of Lille, ending 20th Sept. 1451. (V. vol. 40.)

Jean de Forest takes census, 3rd July 1496, of said manor. (V. vol. 40.)

Daniel du Forest, a cadet of the above family, entitled seigneur of Orefontaine, appears as écuyer in the records of Lille from 1651 onwards. It is probable that about this time he obtained a formal "recognition of nobility" from the city government. In 1652 he was alderman of Lille; he died that year. (Registre des Chartes, LXXII, fol. 1.)

Antoine du Forest (nephew of the above) seigneur des Passe, mayor of Lille, was also styled écuyer in

the city records. He died 29 April, 1669; the family became extinct in that century. Arms: *argent, a bend gules acc. by 6 roses, 2 and 1 in chief, 1 and 2 in point.* (Same registers.)

66. *Manor of Warlaing*: Lille. Jean du Forest, seigneur of Warlaing, acknowledges holding of the duke of Burgundy, within the jurisdiction of Lille, the fief of Courtesien-juré at Roncq, wherefrom depends a fief (Chastel, above) holden by Watier du Forest: 15th January, 1388. (Chambre des comptes de Lille; registre des fiefs; 1389. V.)

Jean du Forest, seigneur of Warlaing, takes census of said fief, 10th January, 1388. (Chambre des comptes de Lille, p. 155.)

Messire Jean du Forest, knight, seigneur de Warlaing, held with others the fief of the Bouteillerie, which Marie dame of Hingette, (widow of Baudouin, seigneur of Harmes and Sangate, knight) acknowledged to hold from the jurisdiction of Lille; 15th Aug. 1389. (Chambre des comptes de Lille. V.)

67. *Manor at Halluin*: Lille. Watier du Forest held a fief at Hallewin, deriving from that of Biique, which said Walter seigneur of Hallewin acknowledges holding from the jurisdiction of Lille:—6th of Sept. 1389. (Comptes de Lille; registre des fiefs, 1389-1469. V.)

Alard du Forest, alderman of Halluin in 1457. Arms: *à la bande chargée d'une étoile en chef, et accostée de six quintefeuelles en orle.* (Archives du Nord; chapitre de Lille.)

Louis du Forest, bailli of the aldermanwick of Halluin, leases land, 31st January, 1457. Arms:

à la bande accostée de six quintefeilles en orle. (Archives du Nord ; chapitre de Lille.)

Jean du Forest, bailli of the aldermanwick of Halluin, acquires land at Neuville in Ferrain, 8th March, 1501. Arms: same as the last. (Same archives.)

FOREST-MONTIERS (PICARDY).

68. Raimbert de Forest-Montiers witnessed in 1160 a document of Jean count of Ponthieu giving judgment in favor of the Val de Buguy.

Mahieu de Forest-Montiers appears in the documents of the Hotel of Monbreuil.

Henri de Forest-Montiers was dean of St. Vulfranc in 1324.

Jean de Forest-Montiers, abbot of Dammartin, doctor of the faculty of Paris, deceased 16th March, 1350.

In 1507 the manor belonged to the monastery of Forest-Montiers; in 1760 it was still thus held. (Recherches Généalogiques of De la Gorgue Rosny, vol. II, 591.)

DE FORESTS FROM VARIOUS PROVINCES OF FRANCE.

69. Michel du Forest receiver of taxes at Douai from 8th Aug. 1398 to 7 March, 1406. See also next entry. (Archives de Douai, série C. C. Bibl. Nat., Paris.)

Miguiel du Foret, with other feudatories of the duke of Burgundy at Douai, have put monseigneur Jacques de Montmorency, knight, and his wife damoiselle Philippa de Melon, in possession of the fiefs granted in dowry to the said damoiselle by her father

and mother :—8th Nov. 1400. (Archives du Prince de Conde. V.)

A seigneur du Forest, of Liege, was captured at St. Trond in 1498. (Chroniques Belges ; troubles de Liège ; I, 176.)

Bernard de Forest, legitimation of, by Charles V : 1548. (Archives du Nord.)

Bernard de Forest, son of Godfrey (a native of Piedmont) by Catherine Heynne, legitimated by Charles V. (Archives du Nord.)

A monsieur de Forest in the regiment of monsieur de Beaulieu. (Correspondence du Cardinal de Granville.)

Jean du Forest, esquire, seigneur de la Fennerie, bailli of Menin,* captain of a free company of infantry, is ennobled for services rendered during 1645 in defending Menin and Courtrai against the French. (Archives du Nord ; B, 1675.) Knighted in 1651 by Philip II, (Collection de Flandre).

Pierre and Hector de Forest of Dauphiny (father and son), distinguished Huguenot leaders during the religious wars, period of Coligny and Henri IV. (Hoag's Protestantisme Français.) Arms : *gules, a lion ramp. or.* (Rietstap.)

Alard, seigneur de Forest, was father of Florence dame of Hem and La Rive ; she married Olivier de Cuinghien, surnamed Riconart, seigneur of Chastelar, Fiennes and Bassy, about 1380. (Dom Lepez.)

A damoiselle de Forest married, about 1420, Robert de Wigancourt, esquire, son of Jacquemart. (Dom Lepez.)

* One Pierre Forest was receiver of Menin about 1593 ; records at Bibl. Nationale, Paris.

Jacques de Forest, man at arms, under M. de la Gruthuse, 1509.

Jean de Forest, archer, under M. de Fresnoy, 1523. (Gaignières.)

70. *From the Cabinet des titres ; vol. 1195 ; dossier 26992.*

Picart de Forest, esquire, receives from the commissary of the royal galleys of Rouen two pairs of brasselets covered with gilded silk and two pairs of gantlets, to serve at sea under Nicolas Behuchet:— at Harfleur, 28th May, 1338. The same de Forest, 6th May 1347, receipts for the price of a horse (60 livres tournois), which he had lost while serving under the orders of Guy de Neele, captain of St. Omer. He bore *gueules, à l'orle de merlettes d'argent, avec une étoile à six raies de même au milieu.*

Messire Renaud de Forest, knight of the duke of Bourbon, in 1363 ; (Histoire du Duc de Bourbon.)

Charles de Forest, esquire, seigneur de la Planche, gentleman in ordinary of the king's bedchamber, receipts for one-fourth of his pay : 18th June, 1608.

Jean de Forest, at La Rochelle, licentiate in law, 1515.

Jeanne de Forest, abbess of Celles in 1572, bore *gueules à l'orle de huit merlettes d'argent.*

Raoul de Forest (according to a census of Milly) bore *vaire d'argent et d'azur, bandé sur le tout de gueules.*

de Forest, in Champagne, bore *azur au chevron d'or, accostée de trois têtes de daim de même.*

de Forest, of Bugey, bore *or à trois pals d'azur, au chef d'or chargé de trois lions . . passants d'or.*

Philippe de Forest, marquis of Piquecot, seigneur of Fontbousart, marechal du camp, residing at Tou-

louse, was living in 1720. The complete style of this family was "de Forest of Tournoir, seigneur of Calincas and Fontbouzard." They were counsellors of the parliament of Toulouse in the sixteenth century. Among the names are Laurent, and Thomas, de Forest, of Tournoir, seigneurs of Fontbouzard.

"Forest de Calencas, (Languedoc and Bretagne): *Coupé d'or sur azur, à un pin de sinople fruité d'or, brochant sur le coupé et accosté de deux griffons affrontés de l'un en l'autre.*" (Reitstap.)

71. *From Don Villevielle; vol. 40.*

Raoul de Forest, in 1243, held a fief from which depended Cuvelval near the abbey of St. Martin. (Cartulaire de l'évêché d'Amiens.)

Robert de Forest, in 1252, sold to the abbey of St. Martin aux Jumeaux the *terrage* of Forest at Luilly. He accompanied St. Louis in his crusade. (Cartulaire de l'évêché d'Amiens.)

Raoul de Forest, esquire, in 1281, ceded to Adam, knight, sire of Cardonnoy, certain tithes pertaining to the lands of Broyer, Serainviler, Auteux and Treville. (Cart. de l'abbaye de Breteuil.)

Jean de Forest, in 1302, held a fief from Jean sire of Pinkeguy, vidame of Amiens. (Cart. A d'Amiens, fol. 51.)

Jean de Forest, damoiseau, son of Regnault de Cosant and Beatrix de Montagny; he lived in 1329. (Archives du diaconate de Nivernais.)

Raoul de Forest, surnamed "of Brussels" because he was there born; his mother was Fredegonde d'Ittre lady of Grandrain, wife of Jean count de Forest, who espoused her at Brussels. The said Raoul

de Forest was living in 1382, and remained with his posterity in the Low Countries, holding the said lordship of Grandrain in Hainaut, and espousing dame Isabeau de Javary heiress of La Croix. From this marriage sprang the "de Forests of Brussels," bearing *azure, a dolphin scaled with gold*. (Bibl. Nat. ms. fr. 31823, p. 221.) This refers to the great counts de Forest, or de Forez, of Lyons and Auvergne, who intermarried with the Bourbons and eventually enriched with their vast estates the royal family of France. Their arms were *gules, a dolphin scaled with gold*. According to Froissart count de Forest and others of his family, with his uncle the lord James de Bourbon, fell in battle in 1382. The above claim of descent for the "de Forests of Brussels" seems dubious. Le Carpentier's *Histoire du Cambresis*, which gives a tolerably full account of the counts de Forest, does not mention Raoul, and makes the estates descend through an heiress, Jeanne.

DE FOREESTS (OR VAN FOREESTS) OF ALCMAAR,
HOLLAND.*

72. Jenne de Forest, dame of Hem, daughter of Allart lord of the said place, married Olivier de Cuinghien (Koighen, in Flemish), lord of Fresne and of Brassy. (Bibl. Nat. ms. fr. 31817.)

Guillaume de Forest, knight, bailly of Geersaliet, marries Adrienne de Woert, or Abbenbrouck, 1458. (Same ms.)

* See d'Hozier's first collection, at Paris, and Le Carpentier's *Hist. du Cambr.* for further particulars concerning this notable family.

Anne de Forest marries Albert d'Egmont of Meresteyn, chatelain of Woerde (or Woert) who died in 1540. (Bibl. Nat. ms. fr. 31861.)

Madeleine Forest marries at Oosterwyck, in 1554, Jean van Ruyven of the neighborhood of Alkmaar, who died in 1556, the last male of his family. (B. N. ms. fr. 31817.)

Jacques de Duvenvoorde, knight, lord of Warmont, Worde and Alkmaar (deceased 1577), marries dame Henriette d'Egmont daughter of Albert d'Egmont of Merestyn and of demoiselle Anne de Forest. (B. N. ms. fr. 31822.)

Magdeleine van Forest marries Jean van Duvenvoorde; children, Marie and Anne canonesses at Berghen, and Jacoba canoness at Maubeuge. (B. N. ms. fr. 31824.)

Ursule de Forest, daughter of Herbert de F. and Marie de Catz, bearing *argent à une fasce vivrée de gueules*, marries Jacques de Borsele, chatelain of Gouda. (B. N. ms. fr. 31824, p. 438.)

Marie van Forest (dec'd. 23 Dec. 1641) marries Jervais van Panhuis (Panhuisen?), pensionary counsellor of Schoonhoven and deputy to the States General; he was born 5 August, 1609. (B. N. ms. fr. 31823, p. 283.)

FAMILIES NAMED FOREST.*

73. Pierre Forest, bishop of Paris in 1350, then archbishop of Rouen, then cardinal and chancellor of France, made his will in June, 1361. He bore *gueules à l'aigle d'or pommetté d'hermines*.

* Mostly from the Cabinet des Titres; vol. 1195; dossier 26991. It is obviously easy for de Forest to become Forest, and *vice versa*.

Guillaume Forest, esquire, was elected to office at Vire the 22nd Oct. 1433. In 1434 he was lieutenant in the bureau of waters and forests for the vicomté (sheriffalty) of Vire; he was then a subject of Henry VI of England, who still held Normandy. In 1436, at Rouen, he appears as seigneur of Mouchouet and Chievreville in the baillage of Cotentin and vicomté of Avraches. In 1445 he was still living; but his estates were in the hands of Charles VII of France; he probably fled to England.

Simon Forest receipts for 17 livres 17 sous in payment for cloth; 1486. (*Comptes de Marie de Bourgogne*; archives du Nord, B. 3342.)

Philippe Forest carries letters for queen Eleonore of France, from Brussels to Arras and Bapaume, 26th June 1536. (*Archives du Nord*, B. 2392, f. 377.)

Jacob Forest marries Antoine Rastel at Rouen, in 1523. (*Archives de Rouen*.)

Edouard Forest, lieutenant civil and criminal at Reims, 15th December 1668. (*Cab. des Titres*, vol. 1195.)

Jacques Forest, of Les Bordes, captain, colonel general in the regiment of dragoons; 24th April, 1722.

Germain Forest, esquire, seigneur of Grand Fontaine, residing at Tessy les Reims, marries Guillemette des Forges, 28th Oct. 1578.*

Forest, in Anjou, bears *argent à la fleur de lis de gueules*.

Forest, in Ponthieu, bears *argent au chef de sable édenté l'un dans l'autre*.

* Des Forges of Bretagne (counts and marquises), now known as de Gouvello.

Forest (no residence given) bears *gueules à l'orle de merlettes d'argent*.

Jean Forest, counsellor at the *Cour des Aides*, deceased in 1581, native of Auvergne, bore *argent à trois croissants de sable, au chef d'azur chargé de trois têtes de cerf d'or*.

Forest (no baptismal name given) was *maître des requestes* under Charles V in 1377. (Mandements de Charles V.)

Antoine Forest, styled des Joyaulx, sent to the Chastelet of Paris in December, 1412.

FAMILIES NAMED DE LA FOREST.*

74. *From the Cabinet des Titres; collection Cherin; vol. 83; dossier 1674.*

de la Forest, of Armaillé in Bretagne, originally from Anjou. This family commences with Jean de la Forest, *connestable* of the city of Angers toward the close of the 15th century; his son was

Jacques de la Forest, counsellor in the parliament of Bretagne, who married Jeanne Pinot, whence sprang

Pierre de la Forest, counsellor in the parliament of Bretagne, who m. Anne Poirier, whence sprang

François de la Forest, seigneur of Armaillé and of Boisgelin, who m. in 1639 Françoise le Chat de la Touche; he died in 1670. His sons were, 1st Fran-

* This name, let me repeat, is never confounded with de Forest or du Forest; it signifies a derivation from some place called La Forest. On the other hand, du Forest comes from Le Forest, and de Forest from Forest. I introduce the de la Forest records simply to put an end to queries and speculations on the subject, and to show that I have searched France pretty thoroughly.

çois de la Forest, seigneur de la Forest d'Armaillé and baron of Craon, counsellor in the parliament of Paris; deceased in 1731;—2nd, Pierre de la Forest, counsellor in the parl. of Bretagne. Arms of the family: *argent, a chief sable.*

de la Forest, of Divonne, bore *sinople, a bend or fretted with gules.* This family showed titles of the 14th century; it still existed in 1751. In 1547 Charles de la Forest, seigneur of Rumilly, m. Françoise de la Charnée. A Jean de la Forest, seigneur de Rumilly, m. Charlotte du Crest, who bore George de la Forest, knight of Malta in 1613. (Collection Cherin.)

Philibert de la Forest, seigneur of said place (in Savoy?) was ensign of 100 men at arms under the duke of Savoy, and receipted for pay on the 5th June, 1567. (Collection Clairambault.)

Jeremie de la Forest, in Poitou, seigneur of Bois-clos and Mauny, living in 1620, m. Isabeau Pitard, by whom he had issue. The last mentioned of this house is Marc Aimé Alexis de la Forest Groisardiére, bapt. 1751 at Beaufon, Bas-Poitou. (Coll. Cherin.)

Jean de la Forest is the first known of the seigneurs of Noirchevant in Poitou, of Gemeraie and the Ville au Seneschal in Bretagne, bearing *argent, a bend azure charged with three stars of the field.* In the 16th century the family belonged to Bretagne; Bertrand m. Anne Ferron, dame of Thebardie, in 1583; living in 1600. In 1713 lieutenant François de la Forest, des Chapelles, was page to the king on the guard of the royal stables. (Cherin.)

75. *From the Collection Clairambault.*

Jean de la Forest (or de Forest?), of the baillage of Caux, Normandy, fought in Vermandois, receipting for pay at St. Quentin, 27th Oct. 1639.

Geoffroi de la Forest, esquire, receipts for pay at Pontorson, 18th May, 1371.

Gilles de la Forest, knight, having served in the west of Flanders, receipts for pay at Arras, 8th Sept. 1302.

Jean de la Forest, having served in the west of Flanders, receipts for pay at Arras, 14th Sept. 1302.

Guillaume de la Forest, knight, was at the expedition of Bourbourg, and receipts for pay the 10th Sept. 1383.

Jocelin de la Forest, knight, receipts for pay at Angouleme, the 23rd Oct. 1345.

76. *From the Cab. des Titres; vol. 1195; dossier 2699f.*

Pierre de la Forest, chancellor of the duke of Normandy (afterward Jean II of France) gives a receipt, 9th Dec. 1348.

Jehan de la Forest, secretary and *greffier* of the court of the duke of Anjou from 1375 to 1386.

Pierre de la Forest, esquire, chatelain of Mercuriol (Drome) in 1395.

Antoine de la Forest, esquire, man-at-arms for the duke of Berry and Guienne (brother of Louis XI) from 1470 to 1472.

Artur de la Forest, counsellor and chamberlain for the same duke in 1474.

Artus de la Forest, seigneur of Beauregard and Montorson, bailli of Gevaudun, counsellor and chamberlain of the king; dates 1483 to 1490, and 1502.

Pierre de la Forest, seigneur de la Barre, one of the 100 gentlemen of the royal household in 1528.

Jean de la Forest, archer of the guard under command of M. de Chevrières ; dates, 1528 and 1540.

Pierre de la Forest, archer in the company of M. de Neelly, in 1508.

Guillaume de la Forest, esquire, seigneur of La Musse (near Dreux) in 1570.

Jean de la Forest, barrister in the parliament of Paris, previous to 1580.

Antoine de la Forest, gentleman in the train of the seigneur de Missiliat, in 1598.

Louis de la Forest, gentleman, lieutenant of a company of fifty men-at-arms under M. de Sourdis, in 1592.

Anne de la Forest, dame of Dron, governess of the daughters of the queen (Marie de Medicis), in 1606 and 1614.

François de la Forest, esquire, residing at Paris in 1618 and 1620.

Etienne de la Forest, esquire, attached to the royal stables in 1626.

Loup (Louis?) de la Forest, esquire, seigneur of Sangeville in 1560.

Jacques Silvestre de la Forest, secretary to the king ; dates, 1636, 1650, 1652, 1655.

Antoine de la Forest, *aide-major* of the regiment of Bretagne in 1658.

Jacques de la Forest, cornet of the company of Rhodes, in the regiment of Rouvray, 1673.

Aymard de la Forest, provincial lieutenant of artillery at the . . . of Burgundy, previous to 1692.

Frederic de la Forest, nephew of François de la Forest of Blassy (?) in Burgundy, 1720.

Romain de la Forest, canon of the cathedral of Strasburg, 1701.*

77. *From the Cab. des Titres ; Dossiers Blancs ; vol. 1196, doss. 26996.*

de la Forest, in Auvergne, seigneur de Grisse, baron de Bulhon (Puy de Dome), bearing *fasse d'argent et de sable de quatre pièces*.

Philibert de la Forest, esquire, seigneur of Les Blancs, Rancelly and Fayalle ; 17th century ; doss. 26998.

Simon de la Forest, esquire, seigneur of Bois-le-Roi, in 1516 ; dossier 21999.

Guillaume de la Forest, in Bourbonnais, seigneur of Torcy and Belleville. (Useless to cite the dossiers further.)

Philibert de la Forest, in Bresse, 1561 and 1566 ; ancestor of the de la Forests seigneurs of St. Croix and Chatellard.

Pierre Aymé de la Forest, esquire, barrister at Lyons, in 1625.

Jean de la Forest, esquire, seigneur des Maucaux, in 1704.

Olivier de la Forest, varlet, in Poitou, 1310 and 1312.

Hugues de la Forest, son of Macé, 1354.

Guy, seigneur de la Forest, of Comequiers (Vendee), 1383 and 1385.

* Canons of this chapter claimed the title of count.

BLAZONINGS FROM LE CARPENTIER.*

78. Forest (or Forez), Lyons and Auvergne, *gules au daufin panné d'or.*

Forest-Roisin, in the chatellenie of Ath, Hainaut, bears *argent à trois bandes de gueules.*

Forest-Vassy : *argent à trois tourteaux de sable.*

Forest-Grenier : in Flanders : *d'or à la croix de sable.*

Forest-le-Brun : *argent à une fleur de lys de gueules.*

Forest-Landry : *argent au chef engrêlé de sable.*

Forest-Bocart : *gueules à six merlettes d'argent en orle.*

Forest-Destraits : *pallé d'or et de gueules de quatre pièces à la bande d'or brochante sur le tout.*

Forest (Courtrai ; now van de Foreeste) : *d'argent à la bande et six roses de gueules.*

Forest . . . *gueules à l'aigle d'or membré et béqué d'argent semé de molettes de même.*

Forest (Flanders) : *or à trois fleurs de lys de sable.*

Forest, or Forret : *argent à la bande chargée de trois roses de gules.*

Forest-Mauvoisin : *azur à trois léopards d'hermines.*

Forest . . . *azur à six coquilles d'argent, 3. 2. 1.*

Forest . . . *hermines à deux haches d'armes adossés de gueules.*

Forest . . . *fasce d'argent et de sable à quatre pièces.*

Forest . . . *argent à trois arbres touffus de sinople sortans d'une terrasse de même, au chef d'azur chargé de trois fleurs de lys d'or.*

Forest (Holland) : *argent à la fasce vivrée de gueules.*

* Histoire du Cambresis, a doubtful authority. The list makes no distinction between de Forest, du Forest and de la Forest.

I trust that this wealth of blazonings will work no mischief. It offers a rich field for the fraudulent industry of our squatter-sovereignty heraldists who discover and prove your pedigree in ten minutes, and grant you a coat of arms for thirty dollars, or a couple for fifty. But on the other hand, it may help to convince De Forests, and Americans in general, that identity of name does not establish identity of blazoning, nor even identity of race. This has been said before, but it needs repetition.

All the same I am moved to close this book with an echo of the sentimental faith which led me into beginning it. Years ago I visited the Cambresian village of Forest, and looked for traces of the vanished castle. None were discoverable: but two miles to the eastward gloomed the woodland of Mormal, a remnant of the ancient *forestus*; and reverence befel me when I learned that the monks of St. Denis had received it from King Childebert 1200 years ago.

Four centuries later crusading Herbertus was in possession, or perhaps only *advocatus* for the abbey. In another century he and his generations had disappeared, and the village was founded by the counts of Hainaut and Cambresis. To an American it was a fascinating tale of antiquity.

Meantime a group of villagers gathered, and asked what I was seeking. I replied, "There was a chateau here once, and my ancestors bore the name of de Forest."

My auditors stared in consternation, and a pale woman piped out, "Have you come back for the land?"

"No," I said ; but in the kingdom of my soul I owned the knightly landscape ; and later I wrote out my feudal patent as follows :

THE VANISHED CASTLE.

I tread the site of the castle
Where dwelt my fathers of yore ;
The castle, the lords and the ladies
Have vanished forevermore.

Yet the magian hour refashions
Moat, portcullis and wall
Where phantoms grovel in donjon,
Or revel in blazoned hall ;

Where, clutching a dizzy turret,
A damozel kneels to pray,
Her wet eyes chasing a rider,
In armor, glinting away.

Herbert and Hugh and Walter,
Agnes, Matilde, Isabeau,
They see me, they beckon—but sudden
They are whirled to the long-ago.

The villagers, gathering round me,
My name and race demand ;
Then ask with a stare of terror,
"Comest thou back for the land?"

The query commingles the ages:—
"Who am I, friends, but he
Herbertus, the old crusader
Who fell by the Tyrian sea."

INDEX

INDEX.

[Names in the "Genealogical Note" are not here included.]

A

- Adams, John O., 136, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 49, 151; Mary, 233; Samuel, 233.
- Albouy, Jane, 223; Martha, 223.
- Albret, Louise d', 18, 32.
- Allen, Jason (Rev.), 233.
- Almeida (captain), 132.
- Archives of reference. p. iv, preface.
- Arshot, duke of, 21, 40, 175.
- Artois, 20.
- Astor, John J., 129, 130.
- Aubenchoul, Bauduin d', 3.
- Aubertin, Elizabeth, 52, 181; Marie, 52, 181; Rachel, 52, 181.
- Avesnes, city, 18, 9, 20, 8, 9, 30, 2; inscriptions of, 21.

B

- Baldwin, Simeon, 229.
- Baret, Jean, 178.
- Barker, Maria, 233.
- Barton, Loraine, 232.
- Bartram, Sarah, 228.
- Bassett, Louisa A., 228.
- Beardsley, Esther; see Esther De Forest.
- Beekman, Wilhelmus, 99, 202.
- Beers, Elias, 227; Polly, 233.
- Beman, Mary C., 232.
- Benit, or Bennett, Thomas, 212.
- Bessas de la Megie, 7.
- Betts, Ephraim, 226; Sarah, 226.

- Bill, Susannah, 225.
- Bills, Lurania, 226.
- Blagge, Martha (see Martha De Forest); Samuel, 105, 212.
- Blakeman, Rebecca, 233.
- Bloemendal, Maria, 220.
- Bogardus, Everardus, 96, 198, 99, 201; William, 101.
- Bornstra, Gertrude (see Gertrude De Forest).
- Bourlon, Henry Joseph, count de, 13, 239.
- Bratt, Engeltie, 221; Rebecca, 222; Tryntie, 221.
- Brazil, 66, 7.
- Brintnal, Lydia, 229.
- Bristol, Mrs. Mary A. Betts, 231.
- Brokaw, Maria, 223.
- Brown, Samuel, 225.
- Buenos Ayres, 114, 18, 19, 120, 21, 23, 25, 26, 29, 131, 36, 38, 39, 140, 42, 46, 47, 150, 51, 53, 54.
- Burgherhood, 24.
- Burlock, Catherine and Mary, 233.

C

- Caffatier, meaning of, 49.
- Calhoun, John C., 142.
- Calvert, Sir George, 59, 62, 194.
- Campbell, Alonzo S., 229.
- Canons and canonries, 32.
- Carleton, Sir Dudley, 59, 61, 62.
- Cateau (Le), 20, 28, 29.
- Cavelier (de la Salle), Robert, 25.
- Chapin, Charles B., 232.

Cheval, Anne, 183.
 Clay, Henry, 137, 38, 144, 45, 48, 49.
 Cole, Henry, 224.
 Colony of the Delaware, 75, 86;
 of the Hudson, 74-78, 85, 86;
 of Oyapok, 72, 73.
 Cordonan, Jeanne Françoise
 Claire (w'f Nicolas de F.), 12,
 237.
 Cornell, Shelton E., 233.
 Crowningshield, George, 130, 140
 note.
 Curtenius, Antonius, 223.
 Curtis, Benj. De F., 234; Charles
 S., 234; Eli, 234; John W.,
 234; Mary Alice, 230; Mehit-
 able, 110, 233; Thomas, 230.

D

Dammartin, 19.
 Darling and DeForest, 123.
 Darcy and Didier, 130, 163.
 Davis, Jane, 224.
 De Forest, the name, 1, 2, 3, 4;
 various families of, 5, 6;
 also see Genealogical Note
 in Appendix; "In Cam-
 bresis," 8, 30, 243-253; of
 Quartdeville, 9-15, 236-
 240; arms of, 11 note,
 236, 238, 239.
 De Forest (persons), Aaron, 232.
 Aaron G., 233.
 Abel, 229.
 Abel Birdseye, 229.
 Abigail (Peat), 108, 209,
 16, 25, 27; (Van Aal-
 steyn), 219.
 Abraham, 219, 220, 23, 24,
 25; (Witbeck), 221.
 Adrienne (Marin), 36, 171,
 73; wife Baltazar de
 Forest.
 Agnes (Le Pont), 39, 173,
 74; w'f Simon de Forest.
 Alard, 23.
 Albert Tracy, 230.

De Forest, Albert Wright, 230.
 Alfred, 112, 229, 233.
 Alice, 231.
 Alida, 221; (Clute), 221;
 (Fonda), 221.
 Alma, 234.
 Alonzo, 232.
 Andrew, 224; Andrew W.,
 234.
 Angevina, 233.
 Ann (Anne), 229, 231.
 Anna, 225; Anna Maria,
 231.
 Annatie, 220, 221.
 Anne (Baret), 178; (Le
 Fèvre), 44, 6, 8, 9, 55,
 64, 183; (Maillard), 29,
 48, 9, 50, 183, 84, 5;
 (Meurant), 177.
 Ansel, 3.
 Anselm, 4.
 Antoine, 27, 33, 5, 171,
 172; (Quartdeville), 238.
 Arnoul, 187.
 Augustus, 233.
 Baltazar, 30, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9,
 171, 2, 3.
 Barent (Barnet), 224, 5.
 Benjamin (1st), 107 note,
 108, 09, 210, 31.
 Benjamin (2d), 110, 11, 12,
 210, 11, 16, 17, 18, 31,
 33.
 Benjamin G., 232.
 Benjamin (various), 112,
 226, 30, 32, 33, 34, 35.
 Betsey, 233.
 Bills Clark, 226.
 Blanche, 232.
 Carl Benjamin, 232.
 Carlos Maria, 234.
 Caroline, 225.
 Catalina, 222, 25.
 Cathalyna, 220; Cathalyn-
 tie, 222.
 Catharina, 219, 220, 21, 23.
 Catharine (Du Fosset), 26,
 7, 30, 1, 2, 170, 71, 72;
 (Du Tricu), 40, 1, 177.

- De Forest, Catrina, or Catryna, 219, 20.
 Celine, 239.
 Charity, 231, 33.
 Charles, 22S, 33.
 Charles Augustus, 229.
 Charles B., 233.
 Charles Mills, 229.
 Charles Samuel, 232.
 Christiana, 222.
 Clark, 227.
 Cornelia, 220, 25.
 Cornelius, 225.
 Crispin, 1S4, 56.
 Curtis, 231.
 Cyrus Hawley, 229.
 Cyrus Henry, 230.
 Daniel, 231.
 Daniel François, 236.
 David (son Jesse), 1S1, 86.
 David (of Stratford), 102-108; 205-15; 226.
 David (of Wilton), 107, 209, 10, 15, 226.
 David (son of last), 215, 16, 226.
 David (Curtiss), life of, 112-160, 217, 1S, 33, 34.
 David (Lambert), 226.
 David (Lum), 22S.
 David (W.), 21S, 34, 35.
 David (various), 219, 20, 21, 22, 24, 27, 2S, 33, 35.
 Deborah, 225.
 Delauzun, 22S, 29.
 Dirk, 221, 22.
 Ebenezer, 233.
 Edward, 107, 211, 16, 30, 31.
 Edward Ingersoll, 230.
 Edward Tracy, 229.
 Elihu, 226, 28.
 Elise, 239.
 Elisha, 216, 30, 31 note.
 Eliza, 229.
 Elizabeth, 52, 1S1, 211, 16, 23, 25, 26, 27, 29, 31.
 Eliud, 227.
- De Forest, Engeltie, 221, 22.
 Ephraim, 226.
 Ephraim Betts, 226.
 Erastus, 233.
 Erastus Lyman, 234.
 Esther (Beardsley), 109, 211, 31; (dau. of last), 232.
 Eugene Alexander Nicolas, 10, 11, 236-238.
 Eunice (Uffoot), 230, 31.
 Ezekiel M., 232.
 Ezra, 121, 65, 233, 35.
 Florence (Ofarel), 13, 14, and note.
 Franchoise (dau. Melchior 2d), 27, 171.
 Franchoise (Petit), 174, 75, 76.
 Francisca Tomasa Isabel, 234.
 Frank Barton, 232.
 Frederick Lockwood, 229.
 Gautier (1221), 3.
 Geertruy, 221.
 George, 231; George B., 229; George F., 234; George Lee, 229.
 Georgiana Catherine, 232.
 Gerard (son Jean), 37 note, 44, 6, 9, 54, 5, 69, 70, 2, 103, 83-86.
 Gerardus (1111), 3.
 Gerrit, 223-25.
 Gertrude (Bornstra), 93, 5, 109.
 Gideon, 228, 29.
 Gilles (1171), 3.
 Gilles (1494), 23, 4, 5, 169, 70.
 Gilles (canon), 32, 3, 172, 3.
 Gilles (son of Phles), 40, 1, 176, 7.
 Gilles (others), 22, 240.
 Grandison, 232.
 Harriet, 229; Harriet Eliza, 230.
 Helen Maria, 229.

- De Forest, Hendricus (son Isaac), 102, 4, 5, 206, 8, 24.
 Henricus, 225.
 Henry (son Jesse), 52, 66, 93, 4, 5, 6, 102, 85, 97, 9.
 Henry (others), 211, 15, 222, 5, 6, 31.
 Henry A., 234; Henry G., 229; Henry Swift, 229, 30.
 Hepsa, 227.
 Hepzibah, 210, 27.
 Herbertus, 2, (see Genealogical Note, 243).
 Hester (De la Grange), 184, 5, 6.
 Hetty, 222.
 Hezekiah, 210, 26, 31, 33.
 Hugues, 3.
 Huldah, 231.
 Isaac (son Jesse), 91, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 100, 1, 2, 3, 5, 84, 200, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7.
 Isaac (son of last), 102, 4, 223.
 Isaac (others), 187, 210, 21, 4, 8, 30, 1, 2.
 Israel, 184.
 Jacob, 219, 21.
 Jacqueline, 171.
 Jacquemart, 23.
 Jacques Nicolas Marie, 13, 236, 8.
 James, 231; James G., 229.
 Jane, 228; Jane Lawrence (w'f Doct. Hull), 224.
 Janneke, 222.
 Jannetie, 219, 20.
 Jaspard, 27, 32, 3, 172.
 Jean (son Melchior 2d), 27, 9, 32, 42, 3, 4, 5, 7, 8, 9, 50, 51, 180, 183.
 Jean (son of last), 187.
 Jean (son Jesse), 52, 185, 6.
 Jean (son Melchior 4th), 54.
 Jean (of LeCateau), 43.
 Jean (of Tourcoing), 187.
- De Forest, Jean Baptiste François, 12, 237, 8.
 Jeanne (Jenne), 170.
 Jeremie, 185.
 Jeroniette (de Buisnicourt), 43.
 Jesse (son Jean), 31, 46, 51, 52-59, 61, 4, 5, 6, 69, 70-75, 77, 99, 180, 81, 8, 193.
 Jesse (son of last), 184, 85; (others), 207, 19, 20, 22, 24, 25.
 Jessen, 93.
 Johannes, 96, 102, 104, 205, 19, 20, 1, 2, 3.
 John, 210, 21, 22, 23, 30, 31.
 John Abeel, 224; John H., 112, 161-164, 233, 34; John I., 224.
 John W., 234.
 Joseph, 226, 27, 28, 31.
 Josiah, 227.
 Julia (Wooster), 120, 1, 2, 3, 134, 5, 144, 54, 5, 6, 160, 217.
 Julia A., 230.
 Juliana N., 234.
 Laura (Wooster), 218, 34.
 Lawrence, 223.
 Lawrence Vandever, 225, 4.
 Lee, 229.
 Lemuel, 226.
 Linson, 233; Linson 2d, 233.
 Lockwood, 112, 228.
 Lockwood N., 228.
 Louis, 24.
 Louis Curtis, 230.
 Louis Germain, 230.
 Louisa, 229.
 Lucas, 221.
 Lurania, 226.
 Magdeleine, 187.
 Marcus, 228.
 Margaret, 223, 4, 5, 9.
 Marguerite, 25, 170.

- De Forest, Maria (dau. Isaac), 205-208; (others), 219, 21, 3, 4, 9, 33.
 Marie (Du Cloux), 51, 4, 91, 180, 81; (dau. Jesse), 180; (Gobert), 54, 184; (La Sur), 173.
 Marie Claire Antoinette (Dubois), 13.
 Marten, or Martin, 39, 172, 73, 4, 219, 22.
 Mariha, 107, 211; (Blagge), 105, 209, 10, 11, 13, 14, 26.
 Mary, 107, 210, 11, 27, 31; Mary Frances, 30.
 Mary Jane, 233.
 Mary Lockwood, 228.
 Maryatie, 220.
 Mehetable, 234; (Curtis), 110, 112, 217, 18, 34.
 Melchioris, 25, 170.
 Melchior 2d, 25, 6, 7, 8, 9, 30, 1, 42, 170, 1.
 Melchior 3d, 39, 173.
 Melchior 4th, 46, 54, 5, 184.
 Metje, 219.
 Mills, 228, 29.
 Mitchell Lamson, 231.
 Nancy, 233.
 Neeltie, 220, 21; (Quack-
 enboss), 220.
 Nehemiah, 210.
 Nicolas (1625), 41, 177, 238;
 (of Quartdeville), 9, 11,
 236, 40; (later), 223, 40.
 Othniel, 212, 18, 32, 33;
 (Othniel 2d), 233.
 Pastora Jacoba, 234.
 Peter, 220, 24, 25.
 Philippe (Philippus,
 Ples), 36, 40, 1, 174, 5,
 6, 240; (son Isaac), 102,
 4, 205, 6, 7, 19; (son
 Jesse), 56; (of Quart-
 deville), 10, 238, 40;
 (others), 22, 219, 20, 21.
 Philo, 228, 31, 3.
 Philomela, 233, 34.
 Phoebe, 224, 25.
- De Forest, Pierre (1233), 3.
 Pieter, 222; Pieter Bratt,
 221.
 Polly, 228.
 Rachel (dau. Jesse), 54, 5,
 66, 92, 3, 102, 81, 5, 6;
 others, 220, 21.
 Rachel (Van Ness), 220, 21.
 Rebecca, 220, 21, 26; (Van
 Antwerpen), 220.
 Reinier, 222.
 Richard, 224.
 Sally, 226, 28, 29.
 Samuel, 107 note, 8, 10
 note, 209, 10, 11, 27, 29.
 Samuel Adams, 233;
 (Hervey), 228; (Samuel
 Peet), 227; (S.), 234;
 (T.), 232.
 Sara (or Sarah), 219-25,
 29, 30, 1; (see Sara Du
 Trieux).
 Sarah Gregory, 232.
 Simon, 37, 9, 173, 221.
 Stephen, 222.
 Susan, 228.
 Susannah, 102, 4, 205, 6, 7,
 19, 24, 25.
 Sutton, 232.
 Tanneke, 222.
 Tennis, 222.
 Theodore Jameson, 232;
 (Raymond), 232; (Ro-
 maine), 224.
 Theodorus, 223, 4.
 Thierry, 23.
 Thomas B., 228, 33.
 Timothy, 231.
 Tonnette (Mouton), 187.
 Tracy Robinson, 229, 30.
 Trintie (Kip), 219.
 Walter, 4, 222.
 Wilhelmus, 222.
 Willem, 220.
 William, 2, 18, 22, 8, 9,
 231, 3.
 William (B.), 229; (Whee-
 ler), 228.
 Wouton, 220, 1, 2.

- De Forest, Zalmon, 226.
Zeruiah, 230.
- De la Grange, Crispin, 55; Hester (w'f Gerard DeF.), 55.
- D'Hozier, Ambroise Louis Marie, 11, 236.
- Demands, of the Walloons, 60, 190.
- Demoiselle, meaning of, 38.
- Denton, John, 99, 200.
- De Peyster, Johannes, 204.
- De Riemer, Peter, 102, 4; Isaac, 104.
- Devillers, Leopold, v, preface, 34.
- Doughty, Mary, 223.
- Downer, Samuel, 229.
- Dozy, Charles M., pref. v.
- Drys, François, 173.
- Dubois, arms of, 6 note.
Jean Baptiste, Ignace, knight, and baron de Harnes, 12, 237.
Louise Therese, dame of Harnes and La Faillerie, and w'f of Jacques Marie de Forest, knight &c., 12, 237.
- Du Cloux, Estienne, 52, 180;
Magdeleine, 52, 3, 181, 2;
Marie, 51, 3, 91, 180, 81, 4, 5;
Nicaise, 51, 180; others, 53, 180, 1, 2.
- Du Forest (of Tourcoing), 187.
- Du Fosset, Catherine (see Cath. deForest); Antoine, 26; Jean, 26; Watier, 26; family and arms, 26, 179; genealogy, 179, 80.
- Dupont, Etton, 176.
- Du Rien, v, pref.
- Du Trieux; Catherine (wife Giles de Forest, 40, 1, 97, 8; Jacquemine (w'f Philip), 74, 188; Jan, 189; Philippe, 40, 74, 97, 188; Sarah, 40, 97, 8, 105; family of, 104, 39, 40, 88, 89.
- E**
- Edwards, Russel, 231; Walter, 229.
- Ely, David (Rev.), 227; Zebulon (Rev.), 227.
- Epperson, Eppie E., 232.
- F**
- Fairly, Hugh, 224.
- Felleries, 29, 42.
- Ferrar, John, 195.
- Fletcher, Benjamin (Gov.), 207.
- Fonda, Alida, 221; Maria, 222; Susanna, 222.
- Fonteyn, Charel, 83 note: Samuel, 84.
- Forest, Gilles, 3; Jean, 7.
- Forest (de), Cambresis, 8; Forest (de) Piquecot, marquises, 4.
- Forest (de la), counts, 6.
- Fort Orange, 75, 86.
- Franquart, André, 22, 176 note; Jacques, 176, 240.
- Franeau, Claude, 180 note; Wandrue, 180.
- Franqueville de Bourlon, count, 13, 239.
- Froissart, 61.
- Fulkerson, Catherine, 224.
- G**
- Gewara, Andrew, 225.
- Gobert, Jean, 176; Jacqueline, 174; Marie, 54, 174 note.
- Golding, William, 225.
- Goodrich & De Forest, 124.
- Gould, N. (Judge), 109, 211, 13.
- Grandville (de la), Julien Louis, count, 13, 239; Philomene, 13, 239.
- Gravet, Albert, v, preface, 34.
- Gregory, Polly, or Mary, 232.
- Griffin, Alexander, 234.
- Guiana (Wild Coast), 66, 67 note, 69, 72, 3, 4.

H

- Hainaut, province of, 17, 31, 5.
 Harlem (N. Y.), founding of, 93, 4, 5, 7.
 Harless, archivist, Sr.
 Hasenkamp, Gerrit, 82, 83.
 Hawks, Electa, 232.
 Hawley, Cyrus, 233; Henry, 228; Jane, 233; Milton, 227; Polly, 228; Stephen, 107, 211.
 Hickock, Eleanor, 227.
 High Council of Nobility (Holland), 9 note.
 Hill, Frederick, 234.
 Howard, Ella, 232.
 Hozier (d') Ambroise Louise Marie, 11, 236.
 Hubbell, Richard, 231; Sarah, 231.
 Hudde, Andries, 96, 199.
 Hudson River, 74, 5; see Colony of.
 Hull, Doctor, 224.
 Humphrey, David (general), 164.
 Huyghens, family, 83; Hendrick, 83; Jan, 81; William, 83.

I

- Ingiliard, Eugene Marie, chevalier, &c., 12, 237, 39; Marie Anne Française, 12, 237, 39.

J

- "June Fleet," the, 67, 8, 9.

K

- Keeler, Phoebe, 226.
 Kieft, William, 201.
 King, Richard, 225.
 Kingsland, Rachel, 224.
 Kip, Hendrick, 219; Jacob, 102, 206; Tryntie, 219.
 Koning, Abraham, 224.

L

- LaFayette (marquis), 153-56.
 Lambert, David, 226; Rachel, 226.
 Lambertmont, David, 51, 2, 3, 181; Henry, 52, 181.
 Lamson, Anne, 231.
 LaMontagne, Jean (Mousnier), 54, 91, 3, 6, 185, 6, 197, 9, 200; Maria, 102; Rachel, see Rachel DeForest.
 LaSur (Sueur), Marie, 173; Nicolas, 240.
 Lathrop, Emma G., 227.
 LeCarpentier, Jean, 4, 8.
 LeCat, J., v.
 LeFevre, Jean, 48, 9, 64, 183.
 LeLouchier, François, 8, 30.
 LePont, Agnes, 173, 4.
 L'Eveque, Jean, 36, 170, 1.
 Lewis, Edmond, 216.
 Leyden, 46, 8, 55, 7, 69, 70, 1.
 Libraries of reference, iii, pref.
 Ligne (de), Fastré, 3.
 Liniers, Santiago de, 119.
 Lockwood, James, 226; Mary, 227, 8; Ralph, 150.
 Long, William, 225.
 Lord, Daniel, 229.
 Lum, Hannah, 228.
 Lyman, Lucy S., 234.
 Lynch, Patricio, 125, 6, 7, 8, 132, 3.
 Lynch, family, 125, 6.
 Lynch & Zimmerman, 125, 6, 7, 132, 3, 163.

M

- Maillard, Anne, see Anne DeForest; Michel, 29, 42, 178.
 Maillard family, 178.
 Mallet, Samuel, 232.
 Mansfield, Count, 28.
 Marin, Adrienne, 36, 171; Aldegonde, 22 note; Anthonette, 36, 171, 240; Jean, 240; Mar-tenne (see DeForest).

- Marlier (de la), Nycolas, 193.
 Marvin, Josiah, 107, 211, 16.
 Megille, (de) Oscar Becquet, 239.
 Meurant, Gilles, 177.
 Mey, Cornelis Jacobsen, 74, 5, 7, 85.
 Michaelius, Jonas, 80, 7, 8, 9.
 Milliman, Sarah, 232.
 Mills, Elisha, 227; Susanna, 228.
 Minuit, Johan, 82; Maria, 82, 3;
 Peter, 56, 77, 80, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 90; Sara, 82.
 Minutus, Pierre, 3, 80.
 Monroe, president, 136, 140, 1, 2, 8, 9, 151.
 Montagne, see LaMontagne.
 Moreau, Phles, 174.
 Motte, Marie, 177, w'f Nicolas deF.
 Mouton, Tonnette, 187.
 Munson, Marcena, 131, 2.
 Murderers' Island, or Prince's, 76.
- N**
- Neuville (de) Ivon, 3.
 New Amsterdam, 86, 7, 9, 97, 8, 10r.
 New Netherland (colony), 72, 3, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 90 (ship), 73, 4, 7.
 Noircarmes (de), count, 28, 34.
 Noiret, Jacqueline, 74, 188, w'f Philip de Trieux.
- O**
- Ofarel, (family), 13, 14 note; Daniel, 13; Thadeus, count, 13.
 Oyapok, (Wyapoko), bay and colony, 69, 72, 4, 8.
- P**
- Pajot, Leon, v, preface, 34.
 Peat, Abigail, 211.
 Percival, poet, 152.
- Petit (family), 40; Franchoise, see DeForest.
 Phaleque (de la) Imbert, 239.
 Philippa of Hainaut, 17.
 Pietersen, Jochen, 201.
 "Pilgrim Fathers," 57, 9, 60.
 Puyrredon, general, 136, 9, 41, 7.
- Q**
- Quackenbos, Maria, 220; Neeltie, 220.
 Quartdeville lineage, 36, 9.
- R**
- Rapalye, Sara, 97; Simon, 74.
 Resteau (de), Family and arms, 27; Guillaume, 27; Henry, 27; Isabeau, 27, 179; Jean, 27.
 Rio Janeiro, 114.
 Robbins, A. B., Rev., 230; Anna M., 230.
 Romyn, Symore Johns, 206.
 Rudd, Hezekiah, 233.
 Rutgers, Harman, 223.
- S**
- Saint John, George, 228.
 Sardemann, J. G., 81, 3.
 Sarley, Catalina, 225.
 Schepenius, Gerardus, 183.
 Sheffield, Joseph P., 131; T. T., 131.
 Shelton, Edward, 233; Jane de F., 233.
 Skinner, Roger Sherman, 229.
 Smoutius, Jonas, 87.
 Snyder, Henry, Rev., 229.
 Southmayd, Alma, 234.
 States General, 58, 9, 65.
 States of Holland and West Friesland, 63, 4, 5.
 Stout, Benjamin, 225.
 Stuyvesant, Peter, 100.
 Sutherland, Julia Ann, 230.

Sutton, Carrie A., 232; George,
232.
Suydam, Teresa, 230.
Swift, Cynthia Storrs, 229.

T

Tennant, Thomas, 130.
Thiebaut, Nicholas, 170.
Thompson, John, 109, 211;
Samuel, 232.
Tienpont, Adraien Joris, 85.
Tietsoort, Teuntye, 207.
Tilloy (de), Sieur, 51, 180.
Tolman, Sarah A., 232.
Tone (le), Robert, 4.
Tomlinson, Beach, 233; Hannah,
233.
Trazegnies (de), Otho, 3.
Trico (Tricot), Caterina, 74, 75.

U

Uffoot (Ufford), Eunice, 230;
Phoebe, 231; Samuel, 230.

V

Valenciennes, 20, 8, 31.
Van Aalsteyn, Abigail, 219; Bar-
bara, 222; Elbertie, 222; Pie-
tertie, 221.
Van Antwerpen, Rebecca Sy-
monse, 220.
Van Beuren, Hendrick, 225.
Van Brug, Johannes, 105.
Van Couwenhoven, Jacob, 99,
201.
Van den Burgh, Maakye, 221.
Van dewater, Hendrick, 225.
Van der Grist, Paulus, 204.
Van der Heyden, Rachel, 222.
Van der Spiegel, Elizabeth, 104,
223; Lawrence, 223.
Van Deusen, Annatie, 222.
Van Flaesbeck, Phoebe (Fiam-
mettia), 104, 224.

Van Imburch, Gysbrecht, 103,
186.
Van Keulen, Conraet, 201.
Van Ness, John B., 234; Rachel,
220.
Van Nest, Maria, 223.
Van Ravenstein, Catherine, 223;
Gerrit, 223.
Van Rensselaer, Killian, 90, 93.
Van Santen, Rebecca, 222.
Van Tienhoven, Cornelis, 198.
Van Twiller, Wouter, 90.
Van Vorst, Cornelius, 197; Hen-
drick, 197.
Van Winkle, Antie, 225.
Verazzano, 19.
Verduin, Elizabeth, 225.
Verleth (Verlet), Maria, 205;
Nicolas, 204, 19; Susanna, 104,
219.
Virginia Company, 61, 2.

W

Wakeman, Burr, 229.
Waldron, Cornelia, 207, 25;
Gerrit, 223.
Walker, Abigail, 231; Zacharia,
231.
Walloons (Belgae), 17, *passim*.
Wassenaer, (de), Nicholas, 68, 9,
73, 5.
Watkins, Margaret, 234.
Weeks, Julia, 229.
West India Company, (Dutch),
63, 71, 4, 195, 6, 201.
White—232.
Whitehead, John, 223; Surviah,
223.
Whitelock (general), 119.
Wheeler, Mehetable, 228; Elna-
than, 107, 211, 15.
Wild Coast, see Guiana.
Willekens, (admiral), 66, 7, 71.
William of Orange, 28, 9, 30, 1.
Winne Tanneke, 220.
Witbeck, Elizabeth, 221.
Woodruff, Samuel, 229.

Woodward, Datha, 162; Elijah, 162; Minerva, 163; Sarah, 162.	Y
Wool merchants, social position of, 36, 7.	Young, Elizabeth, 225.
Wooster, Julia, 120, 234; Laura, 218, 34.	Z
Wortman, Kneertie, 224.	Zimmerman, John C., 126, 35.

 ERRATA.

Omitted from p. 13, line 19:—"DuBois de Harnes :
Chevalier du St. Empire, 1731; baron, 1777." (Reit-
stap.)

Page 101, footnote *, change "App. par. 33" to
par. 32.

Page 111, footnote * change "par. 41" to par. 51.

